

Project DX

By : ShyamBharath

DX is a conspiracy based science fiction novel that is thrilling, romantic and is occasionally kinky. The novel begins in a setting of around 2030 A.D. A future where we are all the masters and robots are our slaves. The protagonist of this novel is DX, a super humanoid boy with 5 times more thinking capability than humans.

DX has a custom engineered chromosome called the DX chromosome. It is enhanced to inculcate the best features in him making him extremely handsome, intelligent and courageous. He is virtually the most perfect man on the planet. During that period, an extremely dangerous virus called the HIV2, a variant of the HIV virus is unleashed. It damages the immunity of the central nervous system to emotions like anger, lust etc and turns a human into a beast. Ultimately the person dies due to nervous breakdown. DX is appointed to destroy the people who developed this virus. His enemies are a group of fundamental global terrorist network called "The Mystique - World Rescue Order". DX is hired as an agent into global military organization called "Styx - The Defense Order". With the virus killing about 70 percent of the population, DX has only one obstacle in saving mankind from extinction... time. Will DX save the planet? Read DX to know!



Published on
Booksie

booksie.com/ShyamBharath

Copyright © ShyamBharath, 2015
Publish your writing on Booksie.com.

Table of Contents

Prologue

Deep Blue

Project DX Chapter 3

You look like my dad

Mystique â World Rescue Order

The United Nations World Beneficial Meet: Combat against Global Terrorism

Styx - The Defense Order

DX the powerful Hero

Heavenâs Abode

Friends and Spies

UN under Siege

Aftermath I

Beyond Duty

A mission you just canât refuse

The XWORLD

Stalingrad Mission

Aftermath II â The Game of Trust

The Motivation

The Centurion

The Media, People and Government

Heaven

Surrender

Project DX

The Great Escape

Albert Einstein

The Cure for HIV2 Virus

The Next Hitler

Tormod Guldvog

DX vs. SEER

The Ultimate Visionary

The Coliseum Network

The Big 3

Dark Games

The Code of Orion

Retrospection

An offer you just can't refuse

The Dark Truth

Tom and Jerry

The K2 Doctrine

Cold War II â The defense front

Cold War II â The Rescue Front

World War III

Like Dadâ like son

World CEO

The Nightingale

Epilogue ** THE END ***

Chapter 1: Prologue

Prologue

Battery Park

New York City

8:23 PM

Prologue:

Ah! Night Life in New York City tonight was quite calm. The cold winds mixed with snow flakes flew violently unmindful of the 8 year old girl sitting besides her 56 year old grandma.

It was Battery Park, 23 acres in dimension. The park was used extensively during the US-British wars of 1812-1815, now remains an asylum for drug addicts and mafias.

Mrs. Anne was highly worried about Angel. She looked again at the IQ report in her hand.

Name: Ms. Angelica

Age: 8

IQ: 170

Average IQ: 100

She was 70 points above the average!

According to doctors her right brain is much active as is her left brain. Her brain chronograph shows this fact clearly. Angel was unwilling to share how she thinks for a whole year. Anne was now determined to find out tonight what was bothering her grand daughter so much, and to give final spiritual advise to her grand daughter.

Few mobs looking very huge passed by. New York gangsters have increased beyond limits over the past few years. Of all the places, Anne had to choose Battery Park to talk with her grand daughter. Angel felt it was time to leave

"Grandma.... this is such a scary place... We need to leave now" Angel whispered

"Why on Earth would anyone harm a little girl and an old woman?" Anne said avoiding her Angel's eyes

"Okâ how long will we sit over here?" Angel rushed

"Okâ !" Anne said calmly staring at pulses of snow flakes falling in front of them "I shall tell youâ !. The worldâ !. The world is bothering me. I need to tell you something important"

Anne continued "Today I saw a sign. If I interpreted it correctly, you are going to immanetize the eschaton"

Project DX

"Immanetize the eschaton? You mean bring God's rule on earth, as it is in heaven" Angel shot back immediately

Anne nodded "That is why it was instrumental that I bring you here"

"Why here of all places? If anything this place is so ungodly. Look at these thugs in every corner, I bet they are planning on how to snatch money from us" Angel whispered.

"That is the point" Anne laughed "To prove to you that devil exists too. Alcoholics, robbers!"

"Does God exist?" Angel shot an innocent question

"Don't you believe? You can see through a lump of flesh, and hear through weak bones... look at his creation!" Anne shot back

"Then why is there suffering and imperfection" Angel replied

"There is no suffering, if we, humans didn't have free will. Look at the doves, the parrots, the street dog, living and sleeping with nothing but God's earth" Anne replied

Angel was silent. Anne continued.

"God however, speaks to humans, not directly, but through signs, and inspiration" Anne said

"I don't understand, what signs?" Angel asked

"You will know over time" Anne responded

And then it happened. Angel was illuminated. She could see it, but she couldn't understand what she just saw. Her mouth was wide open.

"Grandma... this is scary indeed" she whispered.

"What happened" Anne panicked.

Angel showed her digital watch. The time was 9:23 AM. She then pointed to a dress worn by a lone beggar on the street. It had the number 23 behind. And then Angel pointed towards the lone car on the street, the license plate had the number BC023.

"BC grandma... B is the 2nd letter of the alphabet. C is the 3rd letter" Angel screamed "BC is 23!"

"This is synchronicity... "signs" as I was talking about" Anne responded being comforted that it isn't anything serious "God chose to show you something at this moment itself"

"But how is my watch, the beggar's shirt, and the cars license number connected? I see no logic?" Angel said bewildered

"God is not bound by logic!" Anne exclaimed "It is his way of showing that he has power over all things"

"But why the number 23?" Angel replied as she typed the number in her PDA search engine

Project DX

"Maybe God is trying to point you towards something"

"Why doesn't he tell me directly?" Angel asked innocently

Anne laughed

"Oh my God!" Angel exclaimed "Grandma see this..."

Angel showed her PDA.

+++++

Humans have 23 pairs of chromosomes

The human biorhythm cycle is 23 days

It takes 23 seconds for blood to circulate through the human body.

The number of joints in the human arm is 23

The symbol for the 23rd element (Vanadium) is V (roman numeral 5). 2 plus 3 is 5

The axis of the planet Earth is 23.5 degrees again 2 plus 3 is five!

"Wow... that is interesting" Anne replied

"Here not just that... look at this" Angel flipped her PDA to the next page

+++++

Micheal Jordan wore the number 23

Julius Caesar was stabbed 23 times

Shakespeare was born on April 23, 1564 and died on April 23, 1616

Two planes hit the World Trade Center on 9/11/2001: 9+11+2+0+0+1 = 23

+++++

"Now come on you are reading too much into this" Anne said snatching her PDA "Maybe just a coincidence"

"May be synchronicity" Angel smiled a cute one.

Anne hugged her

A brief silence ensued. Anne broke it.

"Listen Angel... the reason I told you about all this is.... you have a very important future ahead of you... you are extra special due to the way you think, and your high I.Q..... and God gave you this ability to test you"

Project DX

"To test me?" Angel asked

"He tests all of us. No matter what Angel, promise me that you will do your best to have faith in God and his numerous signs, and strive to do good to others!"

"I promise" Angel smiled

"Wow..." Angel yelled again

"What happened?" Anne asked

"Nothing... you will call me a mad one if I told you"

"Please tell... you are my grand daughter! I will never call my diddids a mad girl!" Anne said as she ticked Angel.

"Ok... I am 8 years old. 8 is 23. You are 56 years old. 5 and 6. 5 is $2+3$, and 6 is 2×3 " Angel said in a haze

"Wow... you do use your right brain a lot!" Anne laughed "Now lets get out of here!"

They packed their belongs and left thanking God for keeping them safe amidst a dangerous park.

Numbers 32:23 - Be sure your sin will find you out

Chapter 2: Deep Blue

Welcome to planet Earth! It is an amazing planet which is the only one known to support something called life. While SETI (Search for Extraterrestrial Intelligence) is searching for more such planets, shall we look into how life is in this planet?

IBM Corporate Headquarters

Silicon Valley USA

April 1997

NOTE: The match described below is a FACT!

What do all software corporations fight for? Is it creation of amazing experiments or just trying to prove to the world that they are superior? Most of the time the latter seems to be true.

IBM's amazing AI machine, Deep Blue is a wonder. It could perform 200 million moves in a strategic chess game. IBM sent an invitation to Gary Kasparov, then world chess champion for a bout with Deep Blue.

The handsome chess champion could make up 12000 different moves given a chess board. Yet he defeated Deep Blue in their first encounter. IBM was highly dissatisfied given the amount of publicity they made on this event.

How a machine that can make 200 million moves could be defeated by a human who can make out just 12000? Researchers call this human intuition. Almost 99 percent of the moves processed by the super computer program Deep Blue are garbage. Human intuition on the other hand thinks almost 50 percent of things to be useful ones.

IBM worked on the strategy module of Deep Blue and invited Kasparov for yet another match in 1997. This event was publicized even more. Nevertheless, Kasparov loved experiments and he accepted the challenge.

Kasparov (Russia) vs. Deep Blue (US) started with regular timings of chess game.

Kasparov took care of every move and strategy of his own and tried to guess Deep Blue's own strategy. He found it little difficult to guess initially. As the game went on, predicting Deep Blue's move became more and more difficult. Deep Blue won.

It looked more like IBM vs. Kasparov. Though the experiment was great, IBM showed off their superiority, typical of blue chip industries.

Many researchers predicted that the time had come when machines could think beyond humans and surpass all human ability.

On reading the incident on 1997, Professor K2 had a brand new idea, an idea which he never knew could change the world.

That very night, he composed a document thesis entitled "Project DX" and submitted it to US Government Department of Science and to CIA.

Project DX

25 years later, Project DX was completed successfully.

Project DX : Chapter 3

The Planet Times

Fun is the best medicine for any disease.

18th April 2030: New Jersey

Creative hospitals, started somewhere in the year 2010 by Dr. Fermann Laudee, a visionary grew like a virus. It's a creative method of treating patients is not only unique, but is also patented. Children's ward is filled with Xbox and Virtual Reality game stations and interactive science videos. A teenager's ward is filled with a music system and connected to the internet. The doctors are never in their formal white and green scary uniforms. They go around in casuals and they become the patient's friend and health advisor. No doubt, creative hospitals treat patients much successfully than any other hospital.

A new born baby at Creative Hospital couldn't be big news, since hundreds of children are born everyday. But the birth of this child is unique. Why? Is it because the child made the population reach 300000000? No. The baby was born but where was the father or mother? No one has seen his parents before his birth, "during" his birth and after his birth.

Oh then from where did the baby come from then? The Creative Hospitals Press room was filled with media interested to know more about the baby.

"The Neil incubator" Dr. Fermann said to the media "DX is born in the Neil Incubator. A highly secure laboratory in a highly secure place"

There were photo flashes everywhere.

"Which place?" few journalists among the crowd shot

"I said the place was secure"

"What is the name of the baby?"

"DX" Fermann said "Actually normal human chromosomes are XY or XX. But DX has a custom built chromosome. We patented it. It's actually the DX chromosome"

"Is the DX chromosome male or a female?" a lady shot

"It's 100 percent male" I can see the smile on your face" Fermann replied.

Seeing puzzled looks of the media, Fermann continued

"DX is a custom built chromosome in which we enhanced the histone to allow more compactness. The DNA inside the chromosomes is highly customized to inculcate the best features in DX"

Even before Fermann could finish his speech, there were buzzes of hands rising from the crowd.

Fermann pointed a geeky looking guy. He got up and looked around wiggly. His shirt had the logo CNN embedded.

Project DX

"Do you mean that DX is going to be likeâ sort of spider manâ or supermanâ or HULK?" he asked theatrically. There was laughter in the hall.

Fermann took a moment to chuckle and then repliedâ

"Noâ physically he is normal. He is just like you and me"

The press had the feeling that Fermann was trying not to answer too much. The geeky journalist scribbled some notes, readjusted his specs.

"And how about his mental ability?" he asked

"Mentally, he is far superior to us. He is unbelievably intelligent. The rate of thinking, decision making, and learning is awesome. On an average, he can think 5 times more than a normal human of his age. You must look at the baby himself now" Fermann said with a smile on his face.

There was a roar among the media. They wanted to see DX. On Fermann's beckoning, a nurse entered with a cradle.

Fermann lifted the baby and showed it to the crowd.

"Introducing, the first ever bio baby, DX" Fermann said with a smile. There were claps everywhere.

The baby looked very cute dressed in pink tops. It must be around 8 months old. It looked at the crowd, gave a pleasant smile and waved.

An 8 month old child waves to a crowd!

Fermann brought the mike close to the child. DX started licking the mike.

"It is not ice cream dear. It's a mike. Say 'Hi'"

The baby stared at the mike strangely, cupped it with both his hands and saidâ

"Ai"

An 8 month old child used the mike to say Hi!

There were claps everywhere. Photos were flashing around the baby. The baby had no idea why? He was looking around puzzled. Fermann placed him into the cradle so that he can be in view of everybody.

"Questions?" he asked

"The baby looks very cute" a tall guy from the back shouted

"Actually" Fermann said clearing his throat "All of us look very cute when we are babies"

A lady raised her hands stretching it up as high as possibleâ Fermann beckoned her to ask.

"Ahemâ!" she said clearing her throat "We have seen that after cloning, the cloned creature is more prone to disease and dies at half the age of other members. Does this mean that DX will live only for about say 40

Project DX

years?"

There was a big woo.

"Excuse me" Fermann said sternly "This baby is created not cloned. Cloning takes genes from a parent. Then the baby can't be much better than humans. So we built the chromosome itself from scratch"

"So that means there is no surrogate motherâ" the lady asked

Fermann was getting irritated. This lady is trying to get some point here. He nodded.

"So that means the child is an orphan right?" she asked.

"First of all he is not a human to discuss that" Fermann said sternly

"What do you mean?" the lady asked rather humanitarily.

There were buzzes around. The crowd started talking in the negatives. Fermann thought for a while and repliedâ

"I mean that this kid is artificial. He has no emotionsâ"

Fermann was beaten back the very moment. The baby started crying. There was laughter. Fermann looked at him closely. A small pin in the cradle pierced DX. He removed the pin.

"Wellâ" Fermann said trying to cover his previous statement "I mean little emotions"

"I now request the chief project director of project DX, Professor K2 to speak of the significance of the project"

K2, the handsome bald man with a flowing beard came calmly into the dais. There were a few claps.

"Thank you Dr. Fermann" K2 said as he took over the mike.

He pinched the cheeks of DX. DX smiled at him.

"You all know very well that an average infant walks only at 12 to 13 months and that too they only crawl" K2 said

The crowd was calm. K2 took DX and placed him on the ground. He then went to the other side of the room and showed him a chocolate. DX got up and started walking towards the chocolate with a big smile on his face

The audience clapped.

K2 lifted the baby and placed him gently into the cradle.

"DX is a vision that came in my mind 25 years ago. The US government Scientific Committee accepted the project to be undertaken as soon as three days. Scientists worked hard forgetting all pleasures for a period of 25 years to create DX. A big applause for all those scientists please"

Project DX

There was a huge applause as a team of scientists entered inside. All had typical internet smileys.

"These are just a handful of them. There were 1000 more people working on the project" K2 said

K2 gave a kind look at DX.

"Somebody asked over here that whether DX is an orphan. The answer is no. All the 1000 scientists that include me and Fermann love DX. We worked for 25 years to make him. We are all his parents. How lucky he is!"

The crowd clapped again.

"Does anybody have questions?" K2 asked looking around.

"What will the future of DX?" the geeky CNN journalist asked without waiting for others.

"Okâ€¦ we want DX to grow along with normal public. His identity will be hidden for the next 18 years and he will be one among you. You cannot identify him to be DX. After he is 18 years old, he will show up in public"

Several hands shot up. K2 selected one of them

"Why is he being hidden?"

K2 was spontaneous to answer thisâ€¦

"We feel that it will become a huge pressure to DX if his identity is not hidden. The age 0 -18 is vital for any child's emotional development. We want him to lead a normal life"

Fermann interrupted.

K2 handed the mike to him.

"Ladies and gentlemen, please welcome the president of the United States, Synergy Simons"

All the journalists got up. It was a surprise to hear that the president came to see DX.

Synergy Simons entered the room. Everybody stood up in respect to the president. He was a strange looking president. He was completely bald with strange dragon tattoos embedded all over his neck. He wore a long coat. He beckoned all to sit down. He looked at DX and pinched his cheeks. DX was busy licking the chocolate and did not mind.

"Good evening dear citizens" he started "First of all let me congratulate the team on making Project DX a grand success"

There were claps.

"Mr. George Bush, then president 25 years back took a great milestone by approving Project DX. DX is a stunning proof to the whole world on America's dominance and superiority in the field of Biotechnology. But let me tell you, DX is going to play a vital role in America's goals. He is going to aid the government in a lot of issues. But all these after he finishes his graduation"

Project DX

Simons was a calm personality who was very specific in whatever he spoke. He had very high determination.

He continuedâ

"Realizing the importance of work of K2, we have declared DX to be the son of Mr. K2 who by the way is a bachelor"

There were claps as Simons handed the certificate of parenthood to K2.

With this, Simons waved and left.

K2 took over the mike with a big smile. There were claps again.

Several hands shot up but K2 realized that it might take an eternity to answer all their questions. He decided to wind up the press meeting.

"More information about DX can be found on the website, <http://www.dx.org>. The website was officially launched today. Thank you all for showing your interest in DX" he said.

Chapter 4: You look like my dad

How is it like to be lonely in tearsâ !

Not for a day, not for a week, not for monthsâ !. But yearsâ !.

For years he knew nothing but a palace full of booksâ !

And some machines which basically served as cooksâ !

Many times he tried to escape from the lonely palace in vainâ !

The palace was made of solid materials with infinite strainâ !!

He got soothing emails from motherâ !

To take easy the dictatorial fatherâ !

He knew, one day he could escape the lonely palace

And see the sun and people zealous

"Hello DX" his dad said as he sat near his study table. DX had perhaps the most luxurious study oriented environment in the palace of books, *sÃchlich* as his dad K2 likes to call it.

DX was in no mood to answer. A huge book on Euclidean geometry in General Relativity was open on DX's desk. DX was identifying fundamental mistakes in the General Relativity theory.

"I said Hello" said professor K2 in a kind tone touching DX's shoulders

"Hello dad" DX said with a faked smile.

"What is the matter?" he asked gravely "You seem serious"

"I want to come out of this palace" DX said touching his head as though he had a headache.

"No DX. No! Once you come out, you will always want to come back to this palace again. The books that you read do not depict the world exactly. People fight outside. It is a mad rat race outside. I sometimes wish that I too could settle in a palace like this forever"

"I feel so lonely in this palace. Sometimes it has been months since you came to see me. And the last I saw of Tormod was years ago"

K2 felt a little humiliated. How did DX start feeling lonely? He has been lonely since he was born, except for his best friend Tormod, with whom he shared interest in Tennis and Astronomy. Moreover he was supposed to be a robot. It means no emotions. But DX started showing certain emotions.

"I think I can learn a lot by seeing and living with outside world" DX said "I can be famous"

Project DX

"The outside world won't let you live. There are over a thousand anti-DX groups formed. They feel that there should be no superior being to humans" K2 said sternly

DX remembered personally seeing 10 anti-DX groups in Facebook. Some had atleast 7000 actives members in it. Shamefully he also joined in the community, just out of curiosity. But then he believed he was human and he too hated the idea of someone superior to humans created by humans themselves. But why was he superior? He looked quite normal

"Why am I superior?" he asked demandinglly to K2

"You learn things very fast. Like for instance, you mastered quantum theory of physics at seven. People even in the age of 30 don't understand that theory"

DX had an eye brow raised.

"I took some of the papers that you worked on and showed them to professors of various fields. They said these papers were a breakthrough. They asked me if I did it. I told them proudly that my son did it."

DX had a smile. He knew the work he did was admirable.

"DX, you form a leader of a superior race rising slowly amidst humans. The AI race"

"Who else is in this race?" DX asked enthusiastically

"Not many. Deep Blue, Maxis but they are far less intelligent than you are. But you can improve the number. You are the first bionic AI to have reproductive organs"

"Do you mean that if I have children, they will be equally powerful as me?"

"Yes. DX chromosome only replicates the male components. So your wife will play no role in the features of your child"

The word "wife" sent a shudder to DX. He was worried if K2 decided who was to marry him

"Its not just intelligence that you excel DX" K2 continued "You are courageous, calm and immortal. Moreover, your skin is fabricated with strong material. No bullet can harm you"

DX nodded.

"DX" K2 said holding his hands "As much as I want you to get out of this palace of books, it is too early. Please understand me it a dangerous world outside. When time comes, you shall enter the world"

DX caught his dad's hands.

"I accept dad" he said with a true smile

K2 smiled. He opened his bag and gave DX a small container.

"What is this?" DX asked holding it.

"Mother gave you sweets. Savor them and study" K2 said as he got up

Project DX

"Say thanks to her"

"I will" K2 said "By the way, how do I look in this cream shirt"

"You look like my dad" DX replied

K2 smiled.

Chapter 5: Mystique â World Rescue Order

CIA Headquarters

Washington D.C.

=====

Moscow Daily [Russian Press]

Flash News: Global Terrorism: Mystique Spreads Rampage: Drugs, Virus, Bio warfare and murders

Moscow 29th April 2020 Investigation by the recently appointed series of agents by the United Nations on the spreading of virus and drugs gave rise to a new plot. All these activities surprisingly seem connected by a new concept called global terrorism.

These groups have been found to network all around the globe from US to USSR secretly and they spread out deadly disease Trapdeath caused due to HIV2 virus and the extremely addictive drug Menna.

Trapdeath has caused more than 40 million deaths worldwide of which 10 million were killed by those infected by it.

Menna consumption has drastically increased. Several cases of suicide arose because of lack of access to the drug. Mystique cadets dress themselves in civil uniform with an hour-glass emblem and they live amidst general public. They inject either the virus or the drug into your food or your body indirectly. Sometimes they do this by force.

"When I was walking into a subway in Paris alone one night, some people in masks caught me. They had a strange symbol attached to their dresses. They injected something with a syringe and then knocked me off. When I woke up, I felt dizzy. As I went to a doctor doubting something, I was found infected with Trapdeath" says Mrs. Helen Brooder, a 58 year old freelancer in Paris in tears.

"These guys are everywhere in this planet. Their main goal seems to be elimination of humans and they are dangerous. Please keep out of them" says Mr. Synergy Simons, Director of CIA which was an integral part of the investigation.

They have a standard emblem, the *hour-glass* emblem

The United Nations has declared the Hour glass symbol to be Symbol for "Global Terrorists" or Mystiques - The self proclaimed Rescue Order.

"I have just one address to the people of the planet. Please keep out of the Mystiques. If you see the emblem anywhere, report to the local police soon. We need to stand united under such hard circumstances" says Mr. Frizzy Max, General Secretary of the United Nations.

=====

Synergy Simons, former president of the United States 2 decades ago, was a towering personality. He was completely bald with dragon tattoos embedded all over his neck and head. He was tan skinned. He wore a long black coat and sunset brown goggles.

Project DX

He was called out of retirement to lead the CIA as the director, in the wake of global Terrorism. He was instrumental in fighting radical insurgents during his reign as the president and enforced a peaceful world. This was probably why they decided to raise him from the dead.

Life in CIA taught him many dirty tactics to get the truth out the meanest way possible. It might be inserting needles into the convict's numb fingertips or placing him or her nude in a compressed cubicle of ice till they screamed the truth. Or even branding them with heated fork, whatever works!

Today's task was no less different. He needed to investigate three suspects from the world's most terrifying and death defying organization ever found, the Mystiques. Organized terrorism is very dangerous and could lead to massive destruction. He needed to carefully get as much details as possible from the suspects and he had his tactics in hand.

"Hello sir" said a calm looking security guard near the entrance of the secret prison. The secret prison was located underground of the headquarters

"Hello" said Simons in a harsh tone typical of his voice. The security guard was obviously disturbed by the cruel torture of criminals which sometimes he was forced to enact.

Simons entered a tunneling staircase. There were automated surveillance cameras with cannon guns on top. If anybody unrecognized enter, the operator who is in the security tower gets an alarm and he can operate the gun to shoot the intruder.

The surveillance camera didn't mind Simons. He was the most powerful personality of the CIA.

At the end, a metal door blocked his way. There was a retinal scanner besides it. Simons placed his snake like eyes near the scanner. The scanner gave zip through his eyes. The LCD attached to it glowed in green.

Synergy Simons

Director of Operations, CIA

The door opened. There was a long series of prisons. Most of them were empty. A guard was roaming. He saluted to Synergy.

"Where are the cadets of the rescue order?" Simons asked in a robotic tone.

"The last prison block" the soldier replied pointing south.

Simons had no trouble entering the dark cell. He switched on the light. Three prisoners were handcuffed in all possible locations. They all had the Mystique emblem on their coffee colored shirt.

"So, what is your name?" he asked looking at the first prisoner. He was pale and slim.

"Mystique Cadet" he replied in a patriotic tone.

Simon took a moment to giggle and then looked at the emblem on his hands. Below the emblem something was written

Mr. Calgary Smith

Project DX

Mystique Veteran Cadet

"OK Calgary! Tell me something about this rescue order thing"

"Not a word!" Calgary shouted. Simons immediately took a gun and shot Calgary in his head. He dropped dead.

He went to his next convict who was trembling.

"So, what is this rescue order thing?" he asked gravely pointing the gun at his head.

There was silence. Synergy pulled the trigger.

"Not a word" the convict said calmly. Synergy knew it wouldn't work this way. He removed the gun. He already killed one convict. If he kills these two, then they would lose lot of information. He could clearly understand that Mystique has brainwashed and networked for such a long time that its cadets are ready to even lose their life.

"You know very well that I am not going to spare you" Simons barked "You are going to face 4th degree torture until death. No one in history have refused to surrender to the 4th degree"

"We won't be alive for that torture" the third convict said. Simon's couldn't understand what he meant. Their hands and legs were tied so there is no possibility of cyanide consumption.

Their eyes started glowing blue. Synergy couldn't understand what was going on. For a while he felt that they were holding their breath. Before he could react they dropped down. He went slowly and touched the convict's pulse. They were dead.

Five minutes later

"They are dead sir. Its confirmed" the in-house doctor said.

"How did they die?" Synergy barked

The doctor shrugged

"Did you by any chance suffocate them?" he asked looking at ferocious looking Simons

Simons frowned at the doctor

"No" he finally replied "Take these bodies to mortuary. Conduct a post-mortem"

An hour later

Location: CIA Mortuary Room

Washington D.C.

Perhaps the less guarded area of CIA is the mortuary room. It makes sense too. Unless you believe in paranormal and supernatural occurrences, why would dead bodies harm anybody?

Project DX

Bodies of two mystique cadets lie in the front row for post-mortem. The attender came close to them. He looked closely at one of the dead cadets. His eyes were open though he was dead. Suddenly a blue light glowed in the eyes of the cadet. His hands caught the neck of the attender and hit his head hard on the floor continuously till he fell down unconscious.

He got up only to see his friend cadet smiling happily at him.

"Sources indicate that the door on that side is an exit to a crematory. It is less guarded. We can easily sneak past" he said.

Both the mystique cadets fled to the door leaving the dead attender in his own pool of blood.

5 minutes later

"What? How could they have escaped? You confirmed to me that they were dead" Synergy scowled at the doctor looking at the dead attender on the floor.

"I swear to my medical practice sir, that their pulse did not beat nor did their heart.

Synergy knew it was no use scolding the doctor. He himself tested their pulse. What a poor strategist he has been. He felt that he should have manually shot them to confirm their death.

How could someone stop one's heartbeat and start it again? Or did someone else gain entry into the postmortem facility that is less guarded and remove the bodies killing the attender. Synergy felt the latter to be true. But then how did they find that their cadets were dead and that they were in the mortuary room.

One thing became clear in Synergy's mind. Mystique was no ordinary terrorist group. They seem far more scientifically advanced group. It was time to do something before things got worse.

Chapter 6: The United Nations World Beneficial Meet: Combat against Global Terrorism

Frizzy was yet as determined as he ever could be. The message was loud and clear. Eradicate Mystique, the Global Terrorist Network, which in turn would eradicate all suffering that humanity was facing today. Be it virus, drugs or corruption.

The president of the United States, Mr. William Turner was with Frizzy in the helicopter to attend the second beneficial meet of the UN. This seemed a little awkward to Frizzy as not many leaders who were attending the meeting would take this positively.

It would give them a feel that the UN was siding with the US. Frizzy was however a neutral person from South Africa. It has been a tradition in the United Nations to choose a person who is not of origin among the global super powers. It wasn't a rule but it became a tradition so as to give a feel that the UN was not taking any sides.

Ever since the veto rights have been abolished and the voting decision has been introduced, UN has been seeing some great strides of success.

"I am not sure if this plan would work out" William remarked patting Frizzy.

"We have the voting decision" Frizzy said firmly "When we have the right cause, I don't see why we can't win"

"Sure Frizzy. I am confident of your abilities" William said patting him again.

Frizzy suddenly felt that he was being pushed down. Not long before he realized that the copter was landing on the helipad.

Frizzy got down. The breakfast he had at the copter this morning did not seem to have digested properly. He gave a burp. William giggled failing to resist.

The auditorium this time looked much compact with several Bezier curves in its design. This architecture captured the eyes of Cho. He was in his traditional Chinese dress. This made the hall feel like it was a sort of Chinese cuisine restaurant.

The beneficial meet was quite different from the first one. No body was informed about the purpose of the meet though it was intuitively obvious that the goal was to eradicate the rising terrorism. The floating center screen displayedâ !.

The United Nations Organization

Representing the Worldâ !.

EMERGENCY SESSION MEET

World Beneficial Meet II

Combat Against Global Terrorism

Project DX

The fuzzy clock on top gloved in greenâ !

IT'S QUARTER PAST NINE!

Cho was absolutely confident about the security arrangements. Laser fighter planes provided by the US surrounded the Geneva Conference Hall. Russia provided the "Star Force" shield to the hall. If any bomb or missile was dropped into the shield, it would be absorbed.

Such high security was required at a place where all the world leaders meet.

The fuzzy clock on top gloved in redâ !

IT'S TEN! TIME TO START DUDESâ !!

Almost everybody was present. Frizzy entered the dais. There were claps everywhere. He took it humbly by bending down.

"Good morning to all of you! Welcome to the World Beneficial Meet two. Combat against global terrorism"

Frizzy opened the slide in his laptop and started explainingâ !.

"This meeting, my dear world leaders is about fighting a war against terrorism and restoring peace. If it were an ordinary group concentrating on a single country like the Al-Qaeda, we wouldn't need much support. But now, intelligence has identified a truly the single most powerful terrorist network that ever existed in this planet"

The whole auditorium was now dumbfounded into Frizzy's speech.

"The only solution for global terrorism is global anti-terrorism" Frizzy stressed "We need to unite our armed forces and form a single entity against another single entity. Then we are sure to win"

There were boos of disapproval. Certain prime ministers even got up from their seat and started shouting in whatever their native language was.

"It would be more professional if you could use the buzzer system" Frizzy said calmly unmindful of what was going around.

His speech sure got converted into their native languages on their computer screens and the leaders went back and started pressing the buzzers.

The light on front of Germany's table glowed. The center screen displayed.

Mr. Willy Schmidt

Armed Forces Minister

Republic of Germany

He got up and spoke.

"What ethnic origin are these forces from? And what does Mystique mean?"

Project DX

Frizzy took a deep breath and answered.

"There are not from any ethnic group or religion. They are people from various nations who are networking secretly. And from the information we got from the CIA, a very trustable department, the Mystique consists of people with extremely high IQ and heavy bio-augmentation. Bio-augmentation means insertion of electronic components inside the body"

Schmidt nodded. That seemed bizarre. Insertion of electronic components into the body was still at an infancy stage in many nations.

"And Mystique as per any dictionary means an aura of mystery and desire. We believe it's just a name for propaganda" Frizzy concluded

"And what does the symbol indicate?"

Frizzy opened the slide containing the hour glass symbol to show it to all

We don't know. It looks like X with two rods on top of it or the roman number 10. It also looks like an hour glass. Sources indicate that such a symbol existed in the Druidic Religion on the 2nd century B.C. but it doesn't matter. Druidism no longer exists"

"Thank you" Schmidt said sitting down.

The buzzer system hooked up the next person in queue.

Mr. Ankit Khandelwal

Prime Minister

Democratic Republic Of India

"What is the need for armed forces to integrate? We can't in fact every nation can lead their own army against the Mystique"

"Good question" Frizzy said. There were few claps that supported Ankit's question.

"But this question has already been answered. They are global and we also need to be global to defeat them. Making your own army fight against a global terrorist force is not something I see wise. They are powerful and worse than any single nation's armed forces even US, India or Russia put together"

Ankit nodded and sat down. There were disapprovals and shouting.

"So, here is our proposal" Frizzy showed the next slide.

Styx - The defense Order

Global Anti-Terrorist Coalition

To Combat the Global Terrorism Caused by

Mystique - The rescue order

Project DX

Global Terrorist Coalition

"Our symbol is going to be an octagon. The defense order is a global coalition of armed forces and military technology to â€" "

Frizzy immediately showed the next slide

GOALS OF STYX - THE DEFENSE ORDER

- 1. Eradicate the Mystique under any bizarre circumstances*
- 2. Reduce the incidence of the disease Trapdeath being spread by the Mystique*
- 3. Reduce drug trafficking spread by the Mystique*
- 4. Restore harmony to the world and remain united until the existence of the planet ceases*

Lot of nations expressed their dissatisfaction. Most of them felt that their army or military technology would be exposed and exploited. Frizzy tried to explain but it was one man versus a whole bunch of world leaders.

In the end he decided it was enough talking and decided to start the voting.

"Ok friends" Frizzy said authoritatively "Let us start the voting. Rules are the same. You are given five minutes to decide. Failing to do so, will mark your answer to be *Yes*"

The voting screen showed up on all computers in their native language.

Is your nation in favor of the formation of Styx - the defense order? By *Yes*, you agree to share your army and military technology for the cause of elimination of global terrorists - the Mystique. By *No*, you agree to play no role.

Voting ends in 5 days

Frizzy was biting his finger nails. He was sure this time there couldn't be 75 percent approval. But his plans were different. After five days of intense discussions, conferences, lavish lunch and dinnerâ€"l. The results were out

In Favor of Styx - the defense order: 28%

Against Styx: 72%

"Okâ€"l" Frizzy said "As a conclusion, let us see the list of the 28 percent of the nations who are in favor"

The list showed up in the screen

1. USA
2. Russia
3. Israel
4. India
5. Great Briton
6. â€"lâ€"lâ€"l

Project DX

"All right" he said "As per the failed voting decision this time, it is not compulsory to join Styx. But the nations who want to form Styx shall contribute to its formation. We will join hands and fight the Mystiques"

There were applause in the auditorium.

"Those of you who feel unable to combat terrorism, the doors are always open. You can join into Styx"

Frizzy's strategy was clear to everybody. He was determined to eliminate Global Terrorism and he would do it at any cost.

Leaders were redirected to the party room for a calm party. Little did they realize that they were fighting against an electronically mutated group of humans who were hell bent on destroying humanity.

Chapter 7: Styx - The Defense Order

Location: Styx Headquarters, Kentucky, USA

The head quarters of the defense order, Styx was established across the 28 nations that have agreed to its establishment. Professor K2 arrived at the US wing of the defense order.

This particular center was a 20 storied building made in modern American architecture built across the Styx River at Kentucky. The building was skillfully built extending over the river flow. Across balconies one could see the Styx river flow seamless regardless of the building. Such was the architecture.

The center hall emerged a natural fountain with water from the Styx flowing underground. Even drinking water facilities came from the flowing river.

A guy came outside the car looking shyly at the scenery outside. He was behaving as though it was the first time he was seeing the outskirts of the planet.

"DX! Be brave and come with me" K2 said holding DX's hands taking him into the building. DX was exposed to broad daylight after so many years. Today, as he turned 21, K2 decided to offer him to the defense order.

They entered into the hallway entrance. On top of the hall, the water clock showed timings in major world cities including New York, Sydney, Tokyo etc.

On the side entrance to the waiting room, there was natural mini waterfall that integrated seamlessly with the building architecture.

They sat at the reception hall.

"Dad" DX said "What is my job at Styx?"

"Son, you must eat sleep, eat sleep and then eat again" K2 said with a humorous smile

"That is not what I would like to do" DX said seriously "I am supposed to be in strategic missions"

K2 was testing DX's reflex to humor. His mind did not seem to catch humor. That is required of DX. DX needs to concentrate on the mission, not make fun.

"I was just kidding. Anyway, I have no idea what your job here is. We will come to know of it through Mr. Patrick Vidimus"

"Who is this guy?" DX asked little more seriously

"He is the director of Styx - US. A very important and imposing personality"

The secretary came with a faked smile. These smiles were taught in the corporate world.

"Mr. Vidimus wants you in" she said.

K2 and DX promptly went ahead. After going through few narrow passages, they arrived at the office with a signboard.

Project DX

Mr. Patrick Vidimus

Director - Universal Strategic Operation head and Styx US Director

Styx - The Defense Order US Wing

The United Nations Organization

K2 knocked the door.

"Come in" came a faint reply. They entered in calmly.

Vidimus was an athletic personality with white hairs. His looks suggested that he was well over 50 years of age.

"Sit down" he prompted.

"Soâ !" K2 said "Meet my son DX"

Vidimus looked at him eagerly.

"Wow!" he said "DX himself. Styx would definitely achieve its goals"

"I would like to know what my job here is" DX said

Vidimus noddedâ !.

"Good! You seem to be like a man on a mission DX. It's wonderful to have you with us. Did you see K2? How much your son is focused?"

"It's because of him. My great dad" DX said. K2 had a proud smile.

"Ok thenâ !" K2 said "Vidimus shall explain your mission at Styx. I shall leave"

"Goodbye dad"

"Goodbye professor" Vidimus said "Meet me whenever you want"

K2 waved and left

Vidimus and DX were alone in the office.

"Ok DXâ ! have you heard of Mystiques?"

"Yes" DX said "They are a global terrorist group primarily responsible for creating the HIV2 virus which leads to Trapdeath. They also spread drugs like Menna among the youth"

"Yesâ ! good" Vidimus said "a recent investigation by the Styx Intelligence department at Japan identified that the Mystiques are armed with heavy weaponry and an army. Dangerous huh?"

"Ohâ ! that is bad" DX said

Project DX

"Anyway, they don't have any Air-force or Navy or any sort of satellite communication"

"Then how do they network?" DX asked.

"No idea. Apparently by some non digital means like ordinary post. Now we are not allowed to open and read ordinary posts right? They might be communicating like that"

DX felt this bad. He felt that Styx was lagging behind in their mission.

"You are our key player DX. Styx - Russia is using a war machine called SEER. More about that later. But you can help us achieve the goal of eradicating the Mystiques. You will be a national hero. Oops international hero"

DX felt this great. It is a once in lifetime opportunity for him to prove himself. Styx seemed to be a great career for him.

DX looked around the office. It had a classic Japanese architecture with some samurai pics spread around. Photos of Frizzy Max and William Turner were put on a corner of the room.

"What as an organization does Styx plan to achieve?" DX asked

"You must have read it in the news papers"

"Organizations never tell the press the truth" DX said dismissively

Vidimus had a typical Dracula smile.

"OK you are FAST!" he said "Come to the visualization room"

Vidimus took him to a side door within his office. It was a semi dark room. It resembled a planetarium. DX comfortably sat in a comfy couch. The room became dark. Some visual pictures started on the circular screen above with description.

First a small window showed Frizzy and US President, William Turner. A voice came

In spite of the failure of the world beneficial meet II, Styx is established with a support of 28 nations. After its formations, 7 more nations joined to make the count to 35.

The 35 nations in Styx that includes the US, Russia and most of the European nations and few Asian nations secretly trade military technology using secure online portals and secure shipping.

Some pictures of advanced weapons like laser guided atomic missile system etc was being shown. DX felt this a little troublesome.

"Why do you need so much for just a terrorist group? Isn't an army enough?"

"We got source from intelligence that they have a space exploration department"

DX almost tumbled from his seat.

Project DX

"Are you kidding? Why would they have a space program? You just said they communicate via normal post. They are just a terrorist group"

"That is what we told the press" Vidimus told with a smile "Government Organizations never tell the press the truth"

DX felt this quite odd. Vidimus's personality seemed to come into more light to him now. He uses your own statements back to question you. But something else was bothering DX

"Who are these Mystiques exactly?" he asked

"It is difficult to explain as our intelligence is still on the process of unveiling their information. At present I can say that they are powerful and scientifically advanced terrorists. Imagine, they have created such a powerful virus which damages the nervous system!"

DX nodded. He felt that most of the unveiling part would be played by him.

The demonstration continued.

Styx is non governmental and a global autonomous organization tied to Army and Defense Research department of every nation that is a part of it.

Its goal is not only to eliminate the Mystiques, Global Terrorist Force, but also to reduce the incidence of Trapdeath. After many nations start support, Styx will start developing cure for HIV2.

"Why can't we start right now?" DX asked suddenly

"Start what?" Vidimus shot

"Cure for HIV2 virus" DX said

"First things first" Vidimus replied "Eradicate the Mystiques. Then do other things"

Vidimus had straight forward answers. DX hated this. He always tended to delve too deeply into any topic.

They left the visualization room and entered the office area. Every body started getting up from their cubicles to have a look at the long kept secret bio-kid DX. Some people came with papers to get autographs signed by DX.

"What is my role in Styx?" DX asked

"You will be used in primary missions of the order. You won't delve in a particular area or department"

DX liked this. He could get to know Styx better and could help him in destroying the Mystiques.

A guy with typical German World War II uniform went past them. The only difference was that instead of a Swastika, he wore a trapezium logo.

"Who is this?" DX asked looking back at the soldier

Project DX

"The Styx Gestapo, the secret police" Vidimus said "Ordinary police of any nation might easily have relations with the terrorists. So we need separate police organized by Styx"

DX virtually clapped. Vidimus gave a pride smile.

DX while walking with Vidimus browsed through the notice board.

Free Clinic

A Styx SubDivision

570 Avenue Street, Battery Park, NYC

Suffering from Trapdeath? Infected with HIV2? Is the society rejecting you?

Come to us. Stay in controlled and happy environments for free!

"What is this free clinic thing?" DX asked

"HIV2 is quite different from HIV" Vidimus said

"I understand" DX replied "People infected with HIV2 will hurt others or even kill them"

Vidimus nodded. Trapdeath is a disease like never seen before.

"They are therefore rejected from the society and their own family tend to run away from them. As most of these people are teenagers, they don't have much money. Hence we established these clinics which basically as a prison sort of thing. For those who don't want pain while dying, we give them lethal injection"

On hearing the word prison, another doubt started emerging in DX's mind.

"Did Styx catch any terrorist?" he asked.

Vidimus put a hurt face perhaps because of the singular nature of the question he asked

"Styx is well organized. We captured 500 terrorists approximately. We have a common prison for all terrorists at Russia. They torture these terrorists and try to get information"

"Ohâ ı so that is how you got to know of this space program" DX said realizing

"It was obvious. How else could they communicate and network? They have their own satellites in space"

They went for a stroll outside.

Seeing DX's silence, Vidimus decided to tell him in more detail.

"Our armed forces" he said "consist of a huge army called the Global Army, GA for short, designed primarily for destroying the rescue order and then for global peace support"

"Why do we need a global army?" DX asked

Project DX

"Isn't it obvious?" Vidimus shot "Why did UN fail to keep peace in Vietnam war, or Kargil war"

"Because it didn't have an armed force" DX said

"Wrong. It had the support of NATO but it was not strong enough and did mostly peace negotiations. We need a more war loving force which strives to kill terrorists and militants"

"So Styx is not just for Mystiques, but for all terrorist groups"

Vidimus patted DX's back. He felt this guy amazing.

"Our global navy contains submarines with Russian Starforce technology and US's Anti-Radar technology"

"So it can evade being detected by radar right?" DX said. He saw this Anti-radar demonstration in one of the materials engineering journals.

"100 percent detection evasion" Vidimus said confidently "the technology has improved over time. The body of the ship has mini microprocessors that deflect radar signals into space"

"Wow!" DX said astonished. He saw a cathedral coming towards them.

"Our air-force" Vidimus continued "Consists of stealth combat planes armed with the newly developed emp missiles"

"What is this emp missiles?"

"They are electromagnetic pulse missiles. They just disable electronics of the enemy plane on coming to its vicinity"

"Understoodâ" DX said "The plane would stop functioning and get attracted to gravity"

"Yes" Vidimus said "And all modern planes depend on electronics so this is an effective missile system"

They entered into the cathedral and got seated in one of the chairs. A man with huge dragon tattoos all over his neck came towards them. He had a brown complexion and was completely bald. He wore a long coat. DX instantly recognized him

"Meet Synergy Simons, you already know. The former president and the current director of the CIA, and also, the pastor of this Church" Vidimus said as he came and sat near DX "A good friend of mine also"

"Hello DX" Simons said in a sleepy tone. He handed the holy bible to Vidimus.

"I need two oaths from you DX, in the name of the lord"

"Right" DX said.

They placed each others hands on top of the Bible.

"First Oath" Vidimus began "In the name of the almighty God, of whom is no likeness or image, the creator of the heavens and earth, do you accept that you believe in the noble cause of the defense order"

Project DX

"Amen" DX said without pausing

"The Second Oath" Vidimus continued "Would you vow to destroy the Mystiques even if you have to sacrifice your life for it and thus bring peace and prosperity to the world"

"Amen" DX said taking a deep breath.

They left the cathedral after bidding goodbye to Simons. Simons stuck as a rare personality to DX. He looked quite odd. He was muscular though.

Outside the cathedral, a black tiny copter was waiting.

DX had a giggle.

"What happened?" Vidimus asked amusedly

"It looks funny. It can seat only two" DX said still giggling

"It is a stealth copter. It makes no noise. And it completely anti-radar" he said

DX realized it's potential. It truly made very little sound. The pilot got down. She was a blonde in her twenties.

"DX" Vidimus said "I must take leave of you. You will now be taken to Styx - Training Division in Paris where you receive your training"

DX shook hands with Vidimus and boarded the black beauty.

"Hi. I'm Alice" the pilot said as she sat at the pilot seat. Even through her helmet, DX could notice her blonde hair. She hung out a book and a pen

"Autograph please" she asked politely.

The black beauty soared above the Styx River at a magnificent speed and headed towards Paris.

Chapter 8: DX the powerful Hero

Styx Training Center

Paris

Time: 3:00 AM

The black copter landed silently amidst the serene city of Paris. DX heaved himself off the seat. There was hardly place for one in the copter.

"This is your place sireâ adieu!" Alice smirked happily. DX thought "adieu" means good night. The street around him looked grumpily serene. Before he could think of turning around and asking Alice, the copter lifted up and flew in magnificent speed.

A grumpy looking old man in heavy formals came from a corner

"holÃ " he said "You mus be D-X. bienvenu. Jacques Gabriel"

DX wished this guy would speak complete English. He nevertheless shook hands.

"Let me direct you to the trainin facility" he said "Its justh around the corner"

DX followed him cautiously suspecting he might be a Mystique terrorist after all. He didn't even seem to have an ID card. But he looked too timid to be a terrorist.

"I thought Styx training would be a multinational corporate building. I expected too much" DX said gloomily

"It is!" Gabriel said. DX was surprised. There were no sky scrapers around. Gabriel took him to a car in a dark spot.

"Shhâ !" he said as he got in with DX.

"Mr. DX, Paris is crazy about you. If anybody locates you here, there will be a huge mob. Actress Haris Pilton already indicated a plan for a secret tape with you"

DX nodded guiltily. He however loved being surrounded by mobs and autographs.

The car stopped suddenly. DX got down, a huge pyramidal building was in front of him. It was reflecting him. There were different colors on the layers of the pyramid.

"Wow!" DX thought. In front of him, a neon board glew.

Styx - Training Division

Louvre, Paris

DX was made to sit in the reception hall for a while. Suddenly a group of scientists came towards him. Some were pointing towards him. DX got up.

Project DX

"holÃ DX" a scientist said brightly "Are you ready for uploading bio modules. HEYâ l u should have come in pyjamas"

DX was unsure of what he just heard. *Bio-modules?*

"I thought I was here for training" he said blankly.

"Oh no!" the scientist started as he forced DX's necktie open. They dragged him in. They started stripping him. DX wanted to run off.

"Don't fret" a guy from back said "We are doctors specialized for DX"

DX had a chill running inside him. There were doctors *specialized* for him.

They made him sit in a comfy bed surrounded with tools.

"What exactly am I doing *naked* in this bed?" DX shot. Few female scientists were looking amusedly at him. He felt shy. *I am just another damn android* he wanted to shout at them.

"We are going to install bio modules into your body!" a geeky scientist in the front spoke. He had huge black framed glasses. DX was surprised that people wore these glasses even these days.

"What are bio modules?" he asked

"Let me explain" a senior scientist spoke

All gave way for him. His ID card was clearly visible.

Dr. Fermann Laudee

Nano-Genetic Research Head. Styx Corporation

"DXâ l though you are a very quick learner, there are many things that need to be learnt much sooner. These bio modules are pre fabricated for with neuro signals and nano-cerebellum data"

"Wow! That means you just plug in a bio-module and I learn karate?" DX asked in amazement "By the way, hello Dr. Fermann"

Fermann nodded and returned the greeting. He had a style that DX found amusing. He had a showman type.

"Soâ l shall we start?" he asked DX enthusiastically.

The geeky scientist bought a huge drilling sort of tool near DX. DX tried to move but he was caught stiff. The next moment, he felt an extreme pain. He fell unconscious.

â lâ !.

DX woke up hazily. He felt it must have been just few minutes since he fell unconscious.

"bienvvenu revers DX"

Project DX

DX felt something strange. He said *Welcome back DX*. DX understood French! He felt like speaking in French

"remercier tu" DX responded "Wow! I can speak French"

"Not only that" Fermann said proudly "Using the bio module we installed just now, you can speak in 180 different languages around the world"

"Wow!" DX said "Even for my whole lifetime, I wouldn't have been able to speak so many languages"

Before DX could try any other language, the geeky scientist bought the drilling machine again. DX closed his eyes as he yelled out a scream. It was horrible pain.

â lâ !.

DX woke up feeling heavy.

"My eyes seem very heavy" DX said. To his surprise, he saw a transparent menu in his eyes with various options.

"You can close the menu by blinking left eye thrice" the geeky scientist screamed

DX did that first. It was ridiculous to him whatever that was. His vision became clear.

"What was that?" DX asked

"That was an operating system built into your brain. It can be used by you to manage all resources and abilities of your body"

DX was surprised. He blinked his left eye thrice again. The menu popped up again. He saw various actions.

"How do I control these?"

DX use your index finger as pointer and palms as the pad. DX did it. Indeed the pointer moved in the transparent menu.

"Hit your palm when an option that strikes important to you occurs. It will open up"

DX browsed

Special Abilities ã Camera Eyes

"I chose the camera eyes option" DX said bemused

"Ohâ ¡ wait a secondâ ¡ let me call Vidimus" Fermann said excited

DX couldn't understand. Fermann took his cell phone and talkedâ ¡

"Helloâ ¡ is this Vidimus? The DX intercom is up and running. Check it out"

Project DX

DX blinked his left eye thrice again to close again. He wanted to keep track of the geeky scientist and his drilling machine. He definitely didn't want to go through that pain again.

"It is a video transmitter in your eyes that is connected to internet with a special satellite transmission code" Fermann pointed to DX

"Do you mean that people can watch what I watch? Who all are watching me?" DX asked authoritatively

"Not manyâ you can turn that off too!"

DX received a transparent message strip on top of his retina.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Hello DX, I am watching you through your camera eyes. How is your training?

"Not much going on here sir. But they are drilling the life out of me" DX said

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Good luck DX. Just bear for a while. You need to get equipped.

"Thanks sir" DX said

"Wow! This is amazing technology. How could he connect to me?" DX asked

"Simple. They have a software called DX Cube to connect with you. No one else can either hear or intercept what they send to you. It is encrypted with Vernam cipher" the geeky scientist replied

"DX, you have a vocal interface to your hands too. You can turn the camera on by saying *Camera On* and turn it off by saying *Camera Off*" Fermann pointed

"Be careful while using this technology. If people catch you using it, they will think you are a mad man talking to himself. We can't hear or read the message you receive" a lady scientist said from behind. DX felt awkward to reply to her. He wished either all women move away or he get dressed up.

"Nowâ for the next augmentationâ!" Fermann started

"Noooo" DX screamed "Not that drilling machine again"

"DX, relax, these are now upgrades to your physical body. No need of any drilling machines"

Fermann went to a terminal near DX and started operating something. DX felt the area around his bed producing sparks around him. After a while, it became so bright that he had to close his eyes. He felt little pricks over his body. He fell unconscious again. After few minutes, he opened his eyes. Everyone was dispersed.

DX was untied and dressed up in pajamas. He immediately got up and sat. The bed was highly uncomfortable.

Fermann was few meters away from him. He had a yellowish fluid in a glass held by his hands. DX guessed the smell to be mango juice.

"K2 says that you like Mango milk squash. Have it" Fermann quoted

DX felt very thirsty. He was about to get up and move up to him.

Project DX

"No! " Fermann said "Just sit there and try to get this"

DX was bewildered. How could he get that?

"Throw it" he said bluntly

"It would spill. Why don't you try Spiderman style?" Fermann said pointing the glass on a table.

DX whipped his hands forward and swiped it back. DX didn't see any web coming out of his hands. But yet the glass moved towards him and spilled it all over his pajamas.

"Practice required. I didn't expect you to do well for the first time" Fermann said handing a scrub paper to DX.

"How did that happen? I was able to pull an object towards me without a web"

"Actually, there are million nano threads emerging from your palms to attach with the target object you aim it at. You can turn it off too by saying *Push Power Off*. Better turn it off now as it consumes your bio energy"

INTERCOM: Vidimus: DX. Try pulling Ms. Jessica towards you for practice. She is a scientist just around the corner.

A clearly irritated DX brought his palms closer and said

CAMERA OFF, PUSH POWER OFF

A transparent screen in his retina showed a message that the two components were off and it went off.

"What is this bio energy? Are these components consuming my internal body energy?" DX asked concerned.

"DX, bio energy is not being sucked from your body, but infact it is obtained from the heat that your body generates" Fermann replied

Jessica came from the corner to Dr. Fermann. She had a brown pony tail and typically looked overworked.

"It is ready sir. The Hitler's tongue"

Hitler's Tongue! DX was unsure of what he heard.

Fermann made DX lie on his back and went back to the console again. Flashes of light surrounded DX as he went into anesthesia again.

When he woke up, he felt like retching. It was too much anesthesia for him for a night. DX saw sun rise. Suddenly he looked at his watch. It was 10 am.

"Oh shit. It has been 7 hours" DX screamed only to blank walls. The room was empty. He wanted to move out but looking at a camera scanning the room above, he was sure that someone would wade in within a few seconds. The door pushed open and in came Dr. Fermann and Jessica with a wide smile.

Fermann had a huge mirror in his hands. DX for a while thought that they made him extremely handsome this time. The thought immediately vanished as Fermann placed the mirror in front of him.

Project DX

"What happened?" DX asked forgetting his memory "I had a heavy sleep"

"Apologies DX. These were the last bio-modules to install in you"

"What are they?" DX asked. He definitely did not feel anything new.

Jessica came forward and began explaining swaying her long hands in the air

"First is the oratory skill. The Hitler's tongue as we call it. When you bring your palms together and say *Orator On*, extra stimulus from bio energy would flow into your cortex and Brocha areas of your brain. These areas represent language elements. You can speak like a great orator and capture anybody's attention" she said

"Remember several complex fights can be resolved by proper speech. Use it when need arises", Fermann quoted pointedly

DX nodded.

"And for the next bio-module was the best module we ever built for you. I was present with you since your birth"

DX was bemused. His dad never told him anything about this.

"What is that? Oh. I get it, the DX chromosome. Exceptional mental ability" said DX. He was tired of hearing these since he felt conscious about the world.

Fermann gave a calm smile.

"Yeah, but I did not mean that. What I meant was your skin"

DX looked at his skin. It seemed normal to him. For a while he worried if his skin was manipulated like Spiderman or Hulk. He wanted to look like a human.

"It is infact a pre-fabricated skin designed by a Japanese scientist. It can act like a projector for an image. We just added nano-cameras to the skin layers, a technology that took us 8 years to develop. So the nano cameras on your front take the image on your front and project it backwards. The nano cameras on your back will take image from the back and project it front with appropriate orientation"

"Oh. I god! You mean I can become invisible?" DX asked with excitement.

Fermann nodded.

"Just say *Invisible On* to your palms. We leave you here. In an hour, come to basement, we will test your skills in certain scenarios"

DX bolted the door behind them. He immediately undressed himself in front of the mirror. He brought his palms closer and wishpered. I

Invisible On

His image disappeared. DX went sideways. Still he was not visible. It was a perfect projection system.

Project DX

He bought back his palms and saidâ

Invisible Off

There was a knock at the door. DX turned that side.

"By the way DX, don't keep Invisible on for a long time. It rapidly consummates Bio energy and then you will become visible again"

DX realized that they might have seen him through the camera on top. He immediately dressed up.

One hour later

Recruits Training Basement

Styx Training Division, Louvre, Paris

DX wasn't given any special attire. He was sent to a lonely semi dark room with no windows. He had to keep his camera eyes on for the team to monitor him. Occasionally few candles lit the room. DX felt a little scared of ghosts. But still he kept on walking. Suddenly few people sprang from the corners with heavy rocket launchers pointing at him.

DX's pre-fabricated skin is resistant to bullets. But rocket launchers can virtually rip him apart.

DX tried to remember the tools that he received today. He wanted to use either oratory skills. But the guys seemed too rough to listen to words. He decided to become invisible. He lifted his hands up and saidâ

Invisible On.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: You blew it DX. Raising your hands would make them suspicious and they would definitely attack you. You should have surrendered.

INTERCOM: Fermann: This test was to test if you are overwhelmed with technology that you got. There are situations where even you need to give up

Invisible Off.

DX found the remaining series of tests simple. At the end of the day, he was tired and famished.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: This the final test DX.

DX felt relieved but still the tense of final test remained.

He was taken through the cab into a shooting studio. He was made to wear a huge hat and black goggles to avoid public detection in car. DX felt it was unnecessary as the windows were closed anyway and removed them.

He was landed on the back entrance gate of a huge building. There were guards beaming beacon lights on all places.

Project DX

INTERCOM: Vidimus: DX, the objective is simple. You need to enter the top floor of the building. Avoid detection.

DX moved to a corner. He closely observed the beacons. There were 10 beacons practically monitoring a certain area. Breaking off seemed utmost stupid.

DX made quick calculations in his mind. He immediately undressed and kept his dress in a visible corner.

He brought his palms close to his mouth and saidâ

Invisible On

He ran as fast as he could. Upon reaching a remote wall of the building, he saidâ

Power of Force On

He aimed accurately and whipped his hands towards his clothes and dragged it back. The nano fibers connected with them and flew fast and fell before an invisible DX. DX looked around if any beacon noticed. They seemed to do their own jobs. He dressed up and said

Invisible Off

He became visible

[Using palms seems so stupid. Better use a speech recognizer na: Think Citation]

DX hid behind a huge barrel. He saw two people guarding the front door. He immediately used Power of Force to attach to the wall and started climbing up. The building was about 30 feet high. When DX was almost halfway, he got a shocking transparent message on his retina

Warning Bio-Energy Level Low. Power of Force shutdown in 20 seconds

20â 19â

DX had to do something. He couldn't manage to get down so early. He saw a window few meters besides him. He reached it. Luckily the window was open.

5â 4..

DX barged in.

Power of Force Off

DX got a message in his retina

Load Bio-Energy from Backup?

DX said "Yes"

Suddenly DX saw a woman in front of him in her lingerie.

Project DX

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Ooooohâ ! A toast DX

She was about to scream. DX immediately said

Orator On

"Listen Lady, I am not going to hurt you. I am just gonna leave. If you scream, police will barg into your house and destroy everything. If you don't I just leave"

She looked out and then remained calm.

DX slowly came out of the room.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Wow, that was not a part of the test. Excellent DX

"Thanks" DX said

Orator Off

DX got inside the lift

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Success DX. Now come to Terrace directly.

DX entered the terrace. He saw two copters with Vidimus and Fermann waiting outside. They had palmtops in their hand and a wide smile

"Is that DX Cube software on your palmtop"

"Yesâ ! of course" Vidimus said

Camera Off DX said

"DX, can you stand besides the first copter with Alice? We need to talk about your performance"

Alice was reading some book inside the copter. She was unaware of DX's presence.

DX tried to peep the cover page of book. It depicted a girl in erotic pose.

"What is this?" DX asked her

She closed the book with a start and placed it in her bag

"Ohâ ! nothing, just depicting the female body" she said

DX felt it nothing big. He learnt the female body completely in human anatomy section of Learning Center [citation needed: what should be DX's learning center called?]

Fermann and Vidimus went to a corner far enough from DX.

"So" Fermann said "How would you rate the performance of DX after installing bio modules?"

Project DX

"The bio modules are fine" Vidimus said smiling "It's the attitude of DX that makes me worry"

"Yeah I get it. He has a win-win attitude" Fermann said

"Hmm. He failed in the first test. DX won't surrender to anyone. Can this fault be solved?"

"Impossible" Fermann said "DX is completely integrated and grown now. The only way we can solve this trouble is either by manually explaining him or... inform him when the situation comes"

Vidimus nodded.

"But I feel particularly happy that DX is able to show his abilities in solving missions. I would soon send a statement about DX's performance to Styx Global. His missions can start next month" Vidimus said

They went towards the copter.

DX and Alice were engrossed in the book.

"What are you both reading?" Vidimus asked from a distance.

"Biological cross gender anatomy intersection" DX replied still gazing on the book.

Vidimus didn't understand a word.

"Hey Alice" he said "Take DX to his home"

"Roger"

The two copters lifted off silently from the tower and swept off into darkness.

Chapter 9: Heaven's Abode

K2 Villa

Friendly Hills, Bell Gardens

Los Angeles

DX felt very happy to return to his home. It gives peace from a hectic world outside. His home was beautiful and simple. Its outside was made out of teak wood. Daffodils bloomed at the path in front of home.

A direction indicator on top showed the direction of wind. A neon clock by the side showed the time to be 10:00 pm.

"Finally back home DX" K2 said leading him.

His mother Cherry Loise opened the door and came out with anticipation in her eyes. She looked very pale. On seeing DX, her face turned jubilant. She went and hugged him. There were tears in her eyes. DX felt his mom's love after 5 years of painful separation.

"I missed you mom" he said calmly

"I missed you too" she said "This stupid electronic mail never really got you close to me" she said in a stern way

"Come in. I made special arrangements for you today. I got German chocolates" she said brightly going in.

DX looked at Mr. Guldvog's house in the neighborhood. It looked much abandoned. He realized how wrong he was when Mrs. Guldvog stepped out. DX for a while wanted to call her but seeing her quite ill and disturbed decided to do so later.

DX entered the house. It seems much more decorated though it might have been done only recently due to his arrival.

His mom and dad were on the sofa discussing.

"Dear ! why did you have to hide him even from *me* for five years?" she asked in a self-pitying tone

"I understand dear. But it was strict government order. What can I do?" K2 said sadly

"But you both are legally my parents. You could have fought back the decision with law" DX interrupted

"Government controls law DX" K2 said sighing.

"By the way ! what happened to Tormod Guldvog?" DX asked remembering his best friend

"He is fine ! w-what could have happened?" K2 asked in an evasive tone

"Their house looks dull. Tormod used to decorate it with many Halloween toys.

Project DX

"Ohâ ª Erâ ª he went to Indiaâ ª forâ ª vacations" K2 said blankly

"Dadâ ª Where is Tormod?" DX asked confident that he was lying.

"He has become a global terrorist" K2 said gloomily after a pause

DX received the shock of his life. So much could not have changed in five years.

"W-What? You mean he joined the Mystiques?" DX asked unable to believe what he just heard

"Yes" his mom said holding his hands

"Why would he do that? I- I meanâ ª I meanâ ª he was such a nice friend" DX said unable to recover from the shock.

"I would call it youth adrenaline" said K2 moving towards his desk "You knowâ ª college students are brainwashed "

"How do they brainwash students? They definitely can't come into campus" DX asked revoltingly

K2 took a pamphlet from his book and gave it to DX.

Mystique

World Rescue Order

Work for Mystiquesâ ª work for self pleasure

1. Unlimited supply of Menna
2. Superior generation to take over the world
3. Above all, unlimited money and sex-escorts

JOIN US!

"Menna; the super addictive drug. In bars and pubs these pamphlets are commonly found. Pity even some police are falling prey to this horrible game of the Mystiques" K2 said

"Is Tormod addicted to Menna?" DX asked expecting the answer to be no

"Yesâ ª unfortunately he is. He wouldn't mind killing you or me if the Mystiques offer him Menna to do that" K2 replied

DX felt very unhappy. Missing Tormod for more days seemed too bad. Now it was worse as he has to fight against him. He went to his room feeling very tired. All items were quite disorganized. DX remembered how his mom used to scold him for not keeping his room clean. He smiled feeling that good old days are back again. For some reason, life seemed a cycle to him.

He saw the photos he stuck in his room. Most of them were of his and Tormod's. DX remembered himself as a kid. He looked bubblier then. Five years in a solitary palace might have made him dull.

K2 entered the room.

Project DX

"Remembering the past?" he smirked

"Dadâ how did all these happen with Tormod? And When?" he asked

"Almost two and a half years back"

"Ohâ why didn't you tell me?" DX asked frantically

"Hmmâ I didn't want to disturb your five years of training in anyway DX. If anything disturbed you, I would have been held responsible" K2 responded calmly.

"What happened then?" DX asked realizing that past can't be changed

"He started behaving very oddly. He stopped talking much, just talked a word or two and that too if the other person started a conversationâ and then one day, he shot certain classmates and ran off. His troubled father got a call late night that day â whenâ he abused them and told them that he has left them forever"

"How did you know he joined the Mystiques?" DX asked

"Who else could have given him the weaponsâ and what about the packets of Menna found piled up in his room secretly?" K2 reasoned "Instinct always kills reason DX. Tormod however good, had instinct reign supremeâ and the Mystiques are the ones to blame"

They went to the balcony and sat around a table

"Why do they do all this?" DX asked with a puzzled look.

"It's simple logic DX. When people become powerless, prone to virus and drugs, they are the only ones left. And then, they plan to take over the world"

DX felt very angry against the Mystiques. Over the past few years, human suffering has more than trebled. Later that night, he was alone in his room. He fond certain magazines scattered below his table. He took one of them. It was a playboy magazine showing Maria Mala nude. Obviously his bedroom was used as a place of ecstasy by his parents.

DX's mobile rang. He attended it

Call begin

Anonymous Caller: Hello DX. It's me Tormod

DX: Tormod! Ohâ

Tormod: How are you?

DX: Meâ I am fine

Tormod: I heard that you reached home today

DX: How did you know that?

Project DX

Tormod: Never mind. Hey I joined the Mystiques

DX: Whyâ are u nuts? Surrender to the police

Tormod: DXâ no, Mystiques are good peopleâ not terrorists

DX: Oh yeah. They seem good to you because you get Menna. But look at what they are doing to people by spreading the virus

Tormod: Listen we need to meet. I can't explain you all in telephone

DX didn't know what to answer. Reason told him to trace his number and arrest him. Instinct told him to meet him and try to help him out. Instinct killed reason

DX: All right. When shall we meet?

Tormod: The Proving Grounds, in an hour

DX: Theâ what?

Tormod: Proving Grounds, located 10 miles from our home near the old base station. Ask anyone there and they would tell you

DX: Sure

Tormod: Bye. And make sure you come aloneâ unarmed

Chapter 10: Friends and Spies

K2 cleared her wet lips gently with his fingers. It was still as wet. He seemed to have kissed her too much on the lips. His passion for Cherry, his beautiful wife never exhausted. She still looked as hot as she was when he first met her. No wonder she had a separate cosmetic room. Being the wife of a rich scientist had its advantages.

K2's muscular body almost covered her entirely like a strong blanket thus making her body sweat. While she was struggling to let herself free, K2 trapped her head on the pillow and planted a deep kiss.

"Do you still love me?" K2 asked her

"More than ever" Cherry replied

"Even as I am growing old and bald" K2 quipped

"A wife loves her husband's soul, not his body" Cherry replied "Lets go another round"

Knock Knock Knock

"Dad it's me DX. We need to talk"

K2 was in an erotic mood after many work days. He didn't want to miss this night.

"Let's talk tomorrow DX, go to bed" K2 said in a lulling tone

"We need to talk now" DX said frantically "Tormod called me few minutes back"

On hearing the word Tormod, K2 immediately sprang up from bed and started dressing up. He was not worried much of Tormod but he sure was worried about what might happen to DX.

"Don't leave the bed honey" he kissed Cherry as he left

They enter the hall.

"What did he say?" K2 questioned

"He asked me to come in exactly an hour to Proving Groundsâ alone" DX said nervously

"Oh, that is just 10 miles from here. Listen; turn your camera eyes on, load your weapons and go" K2 said in a commanding tone.

"B-Butâ he asked me to come without weapons" DX cited

"I love you DX" K2 said "âand I hope you love your life"

DX nodded

"But, isn't it dangerous to go alone?" DX asked in a demanding tone

Project DX

"Take it as a practice DX. In future, you will be surprised to know in what sort of dangerous missions you would be sent all alone. Don't fret. You are completely trained to fight any type of enemy" K2 encouraged him

DX felt a little odd when he heard the term *enemy*. Tormod spoke in a very friendly tone though. It seemed very odd for Tormod to actually conspire against him. But DX realized that Menna could bring people to do just about anything for it.

DX nevertheless got ready. He took a mini-plasma gun. This gun would effectively kill or disable the enemy permanently by electrifying them with raw electron spray. Plus the temperature would rapidly consume the skin and tissues.

K2 was operating DX Cube on his laptop

Camera on DX said

His vision appeared in the laptop.

"Wish you luck DX" K2 said

DX got in Peugeot [citation needed: Get a more advanced car]. He got in the backseat. A monitor appeared in front of him with a map. It was a touch screen monitor. DX was able to move the map by touching the display with his finger and dragging it around. He zoomed in around Los Angeles outskirts. He couldn't find proving grounds. He typed "Proving Grounds" to search box on top right.

Immediately the map relocated itself and showed Proving Grounds with a picture of it. There were a series of options on the right side. DX selected "Drive me there" option.

The car's auto-driver mode started driving towards Proving Grounds. It was able to use Frames Data Structure internally to drive without even a slightest probability of an accident while DX relaxed himself with a mango milkshake.

After few minutes, the car stopped suddenly. DX got down looking around strangely. There was a Jatropha filling station ahead of him. Far off, he was able to see a disbanded concrete floor with a street light.

A bum was standing with a beer bottle in his hand. He looked tiredly at DX.

"Lookin lost. Mae be yeh are lookin for provin groundz" he said half drunk

"Yeah" DX said exploring around completely ignoring the bum

"Itz the concrete floor yeh were lookin at" he said gobbling another mouthful of beer "The besth place forr suicide". He almost fell down but was able to get up slowly.

"Thanks" DX said "I advice you to drink less"

He raced off to proving grounds wading through grass and darkness. He was able to hear movements down. Fearing snakes, DX started running towards Proving grounds. He reached the concrete floor. It was completely deserted.

"Torms! Torms!" DX tried calling but with no response.

Project DX

The pole of street light had a small device attached to it. Suddenly a voice spoke from it.

There is no Tormod. He actually sent me to talk with you.

It was a feminine voice. It was a very comely voice

"Where are you speaking from? Why don't come over here?" DX asked looking at the device.

"Switch off your camera eyesâ then I shall pop up", the voice said

Pop up! Did he hear? DX was unsure. He acted as though he was poking something into his eyes and then turned back

"It's off" he said confidently

"No it is not. We can detect signals being transmitted from your body" the voice said again

"Camera Off". DX said turning back. He then turned back only to see a young short lady. She looked quite homely with a soft face. Her hands had the hour glass symbolâ assuring DX that she is from Mystique.

"Where did you come from?" DX asked looking around.

She completely ignored his question and started speaking on her own.

"I am Kristina Angelicaâ you can call me Angel - Evangelist of Mystiques"

DX couldn't control a wide smile over his face

"What's so funny?" she asked with a smile

"You look so homely and nice to be a terrorist" DX said frankly "You wouldn't even hurt a fly"

"It's true. We are good people. We wouldn't hurt a fly" she said proudly

"You were successful in launching a bioweapon and an extremely addictive narcotic, Menna. Now that hurts more than a fly" DX said as though it is obvious

"Do you believe we could do all this? Just now you said I couldn't hurt a fly" angel remarked

DX felt this annoying. Like Vidimus, she repeated his dialogs to him

"The news papers, the TV channels and the people, everybody knows this. I've heard painful testimonials of people" DX countered

"Soâ what do *you* think about the rescue order?" she asked with her eyebrows raised

"I want to bring peace and happiness back to the world. I will destroy them" DX declared

Angel looked around. There was no one.

"I see that you are here to spy" she said

Project DX

"Yes" DX replied. It was obvious and was of no use to counter it.

"Good. Now let me accept that I am here to spy too. Now let us set a protocol. You and I shall forget for a while that I work for the Mystiques and you work for Styx and become friends. In that way, we can share information as spies" Angel offered

DX thought for a while. Angel extended her hands. He shook it almost instantaneously.

"We are friends" he said "But with a distance. Remember, we are still enemies"

Angel gave a smile

"Enemies are temporary DX. Friends are forever. We are not enemies" she said "All that is needed is a change in organization to change enemies, but you will still remember friends"

DX nodded in approval.

"Sit down" she suggested

They sat down leaning against a derelict wall.

"Remember" Angel said "We are friends and try maximum not to blame others. It is a personal contact that we have here"

"Yeah" DX said. This was getting more interesting to him.

"So, tell me something about yourself and your life?" Angel asked him

"I am a partial android as you must have heard of. Many of components inside me are replica of humans so I am partially android not totally" DX said in a relaxed tone "Frankly I myself didn't know what my body is capable ofâ until yesterday where they installed bio-modules in my body. I can handle any type of enemy now"

"Nice to hear that" angel said pressing her fingers together "How do you feel to be with Styx, the defense order"

"I feel so happy to be in the defense orderâ frankly because of their causeâ" DX replied almost instantaneously "a feeling that leaders of the world can get together to solve world's greatest problems"

"Hmmâ" she nodded

"Tell me about you" DX asked

"My history dates back to when I was a kidâ I was quite aloof from many other kidsâ" she said rubbing her forehead with her fingers

DX found this natural. Many terrorists are those who stay aloof from others and gather devil's ideas

"...times when I sit at a place for hours together and understand human natureâ" she giggled uncontrollably "â and it makes me laugh"

Project DX

DX was bemused

"Why is so funny about human nature?" he asked

"Simple DX. Let me just give you one example. Suppose you are leader of a particular area and suppose there are riots in your area, how will you handle it?" Angel questioned

"Hmm send police to deal with them"

"No wonder" she said "You are a replica of humans. Humans tend to find cure for a problem, ignoring the cause. But if the cause is destroyed, there will be never a necessity for a cure"

DX kept a puzzling look typical of him

"For instance, cause for riots is because of conflicts in people's thoughts these thoughts are instilled in people by the very people we call leaders"

"Why would leaders want to do that?" DX interrupted

"Ideas followed by riots makes the idea more popular" she said "It is a tool they use to increase emotions on an idea and embed it into people's heart"

DX had a pause

"It's just my advice to look into the cause DX" she said in a soothing tone "Only if you understand the cause of a particular task assigned to you, undertake it"

"Right" DX said "What about your cause?"

"My cause, as you believe is not to destroy humanity as the defense order or the press told you you will not believe this now, but in course of time, you will understand slowly" she said in a brave tone fighting DX's accusation

She browsed her pockets and took out a needle. It had a spherical ending. She gave it to DX proudly as though presenting a diamond.

"What is this?" DX asked looking at it in every possible angle

"Before that, answer this question" said Angel fixing her gaze at him "How many Styx soldiers lost their life while fighting against the Mystiques?"

"Zero" DX replied proudly

"It's because of this the soul saver as we call it. All our weapons are equipped with it. When we shoot this at someone, they instantaneously go unconscious for hours together"

DX felt a little moved

"This is how we save life" Angel said compassionately "Enemies are temporary we have no right to take away other's life"

Project DX

DX tried hard to control his giggle when he imagined the complex plasma fusion gun he had with him. This simple weapon *Soul Saver* is amazing and saves life. He decided to propose the solution to Styx.

"Okâ ¦ DX" Angel said looking at her watch "It's time for me to moveâ ¦ listen again, for everything in your life, go with the cause"

DX shook her hands

"Nice meeting you Angel" he said. She asked DX to turn around for one minute. After half a minute, he heard no noise and turned back. She was gone, nowhere to be seen. DX couldn't understand where she could have disappeared. He didn't even hear her running footsteps. He looked at the light pole. There was no device.

DX felt lazy to ward through the darkness to his car. He dozed on the concrete floor.

â lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ lâ ¦.

DX woke with a start. Before him, K2 was staring with a smile. His mother was besides him. It was early morning. He looked around; he was still in Proving Grounds.

"What happened?" K2 asked looking concerned

"How are you feeling dear?" his mom asked in a troubled tone

"A bunch of unknown guys of the rescue order injected anesthesia into me" DX said

"Until the camera eyes were on, a woman was conversing with you with a device" K2 said

"Yeahâ ¦" DX replied "As soon as I turned it off, the attack took place. There were many of themâ ¦ I was expecting you to send reinforcements"

K2 patted him

"I am sorry. I didn't expect a woman would do much harm" K2 said "I guess they wanted to check your anatomy"

"Maybe" DX said

DX preferred not to leak anything about Angel to Styx. He wanted to keep her as a personal friend and as a spy. They got into Peugeot and the car drove them home at a rapid speed in the empty road. DX, felt still tired and he dozed off on his bed.

Chapter 11: UN under Siege

It was a bright open field in Proving Grounds. The whole view was fuzzy. It was a procession. Angel was holding the mike. There were little kids sitting below listening to her. All of them were very young around 8 to 10 years old. DX was standing besides her with a plasma gun.

"Welcome to the rescue order dear children" she started speaking "Those who want the happy world of money, lust and drugs come over to one side"

DX felt this stupid. These kids were too young to even understand the meaning of these words. A half of the kids came over to one side with puzzled looks

"Start the drugs" Angel commanded

A group of Mystique cadets marched forward with syringes in their hands.

"That must be Menna" DX thought

They were about to administer drugs to kids.

"Kill the cause" DX thought and immediately started shooting the cadets. They were invincible. Immediately they turned back and started shooting him

DX woke with a start only to find his mother waking him. It was a bad dream. He cleared his eyes. His mom was looking troubled.

"What happened mom?" DX asked in a concerned tone

"A stealth copter is waiting for you DX" she replied in panic "You have received an emergency mission. Get ready soon"

DX entered his bathroom and took a quick shower. By the time he got out, The Styx team was in his room in their uniform. They had a common badge.

Styx Operations Team - A21

DX was given a uniform. They gave him a bag to wear as the team moved towards the terrace. A huge copter for operations was standing ahead of him. DX had no idea what the emergency mission was. He thought of asking

"DXâ your mission will be briefed on the way" a senior looking guy said rushing him.

DX bade his mom goodbye as the copter took off his home.

"I am Wang Tee, head of this operation" he said in a friendly tone on the way "Meet the rest of teamâ Hugo and Victor"

They waved at him in a negligent manner. DX could clearly see the nervousness inside them.

"What is the operation? I heard that it is an emergency" DX asked

Project DX

"The United Nations is under siege by the Mystiques. The general secretary, Frizzy Max is held captive" Wang replied

"When did this happen?" DX asked

"We received information about malfunctioning of security yesterday night itself. But we were unable to contact you" Wang said rubbing his balding head

DX felt that the whole Mystique meet might have been a pre-plan to remove his presence on the spot. *Damn it* he thought.

"Where did the terrorists hold the hostage?" Hugo asked suddenly

"In the 14th floor [citation needed: no of floors in UN] according to last report" Wang replied "But it could've easily changed now"

"So it implies we need to attack from terrace" Hugo said

"Negative" Wang said dismissively "They must be waiting with heavy arms there"

"Any great ideas" he asked

"I've got one" DX said looking around "This seems to be a stealth copter. Isn't it?"

Victor nodded

"Oh" DX said "They must be watching the outside view in TV"

DX pictured how every news channel must be pointing to UN from every possible angle.

"No" Victor said looking at Wang's eyes

"Yes" Wang confirmed "we asked the press to withhold the news until further orders"

"Cool" the idea is if the driver is skillful enough, he can drive the copter parallel to the building. People on the terrace would be busy looking up and thus fail to notice"

"Hmm" Wang replied stammering "It seems a bit risky" "hmm" right, lemme talk with the pilot"

He opened the deck door and went in. After a while he came back and showed thumbs up.

The copter lowered its position several yards away from the UN building. The copter moved parallel. People below were bemused to see a copter moving so close. The pilot dodged the copter through several billboards and finally reached the UN building. When it reached the 12th floor from bottom, it halted.

The defense order cadets threw wires and hung to a glass door. The copter moved down and swept off parallel. There was no noise around.

"I think we achieved stealth" Wang said smiling

"I hope so" DX said

Project DX

Hugo opened the glass pane first and entered. Slowly the whole team entered in and locked the glass panes.

Hugo went ahead slowly. He looked below.

INTERCOM: Hugo: There is a rescue order cadet below. Let me deal with him!

Hugo slips down. A gun shot was heard followed by a shriek

"That sounds like Hugo" Wang panicked and went below. He saw Hugo down. A rescue order cadet was investigating the body. Wang pointed his stealth pistol at him and shot him. The cadet instantaneously died.

INTERCOM: Wang: Hugo is down. I am in disguise of Rescue order cadet here. They are taking Turner to a floor below into a room called Syndicate room

"Roger" DX said

"I need a floor plan" DX said

INTERCOM: Vidimus: I have an electronic version of the floor plan. Get it!

Received UN Floor Plan.pdf

DX was able to open the document in his brain. He went through the current floor plan.

"Cool..., the room exactly below us is the syndicate room" DX said jubilantly

"We have drilling tools" Victor said removing his bag.

"No!!" DX said "We can get caught! they are directly below us dear!"

"Hmm! how about drilling adjacent room" Victor suggested

"I have a better idea! the floors have a uniform layout. If we drill the bathroom floor, we can directly enter the bathroom of the Syndicate room!"

Victor started walking towards the bathroom. They entered in. Victor drilled a very small hole.

"Victor! we need to get down! stop joking" DX said sternly

"This is not a joke!" he said "It is for sending a grasshopper first to survey"

DX did not understand. Victor took a PDA and kept in an angle so that DX can also see it. He took a toy that resembled a grasshopper.

"It has an inbuilt camera in its eyes for monitoring around" Victor said

DX nodded. Victor released the grasshopper through the hole. They were able to see the video transmitted by the grasshopper on the PDA. The toilet below was empty. But they were able to hear noises outside. Victor was able to control the grasshopper through controls on the PDA.

"We need to get the grasshopper out of the bathroom" DX said looking at the video

Project DX

Victor tried finding gaps through the door but failed to find one. Suddenly the door opened and a rescue order cadet came inside. The grasshopper slipped out.

DX received the shock of his life. In the syndicate room, Tormod was shaking hands with Frizzy Max.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: DX, this is most shocking moment of my life, Frizzy joined the global terroristsâ this means the terrorists now control the United Nationsâ something must be done immediately

DX continued seeing the video. Tormod suddenly asked all his troops to move outside. He perhaps wanted to discuss some confidential matter.

"Victor, this is the right time to attack" DX said urging him to drill

Victor drilled a hole fast and opened it. The rescue order cadet looked up. DX shot him with his stealth pistol. The got down slowly to the bathroom. They rushed out of it. Victor fixed Tormod in a gun point while DX locked the door from inside.

"Mr. DX, stop this atrocity and surrender to the rescue order. I have joined them to foil your play" Frizzy threatened

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Special order from higher senate of Styx DX. Kill Frizzyâ I repeat, kill Frizzy. Styx troops have started moving in and are exchanging fire with the rescue order troops

DX started thinking. Killing a UN general secretary seemed too much for him.

"Kill him DX" Victor said "I got the message nowâ or else I will kill him"

DX instantaneously shot Frizzy with his gun on the heart. Frizzy's face widened as he fell down on the floor. A stream of blood started flowing from his heart. DX couldn't believe what he just did. Another intercom streamed in

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Sources now indicate that Tormod is head of the Mystiques. Kill him too

"I will kill him" Victor said pulling the trigger. DX acted as though he slipped on floor deliberately shaking Victor's hands as the pistol fell down.

A copter surfaced outside the floor. Few rescue order cadets broke the glass door by firing at it. They pointed the gun at DX. Tormod ordered them to cease fire and started running towards them. As DX and Tormod were seeing each other, the copter took off.

Chapter 12: Aftermath I

The copter landed amidst the scenic view of Styx River. DX turned his camera eyes off. He felt people might look glum because of Frizzy's death. And worse, he killed him.

No sooner did the doors of copter open, than people surrounded them with cheers. They lifted DX in air and cheered him up.

Lot of people shook hands with him introducing themselves.

"I'm Josh" a slim guy introduced himself "technical researcher on bionic data integration"

"Gosh...!" DX said rubbing sweat off his forehead "I thought people here would have me murdered for killin Frizzy"

"You did a great job" Josh encouraged him "If you didn't kill Frizzy, the world would have landed in danger. Imagine the United Nations supporting terrorists"

That very point struck DX hard. How could someone with as nice ideas as Frizzy, someone who dedicated his whole life for development of world, suddenly change directions towards the Mystiques, towards terrorism?

It took quite a while for DX to shove through the little crowd and enter the headquarters. DX sat down at the reception. The whole room was modified. Now the water clock was replaced with normal clocks. DX felt this bad.

On his left corner, a painting depicted a woman dipping her baby into a river holding his legs. DX was surprised. He kept staring the painting for a long time

"Tea please" he heard a voice. He turned around to see a fabulous young lady offering tea.

"Thanks" DX said taking tea. He then continued staring at the painting.

"What do feel so surprising about the painting?" she asked him

"Ohâ ª nothing special. From the looks of the lady, it seems she's the mother of the babyâ ª ¯ but she is in turn drowning her baby into the lakeâ ª ¯ does she hate him?" DX asked puzzled.

"Didn't you read Iliad?" she asked popping her eyes

"Yeahâ ª ¯ I did" DX said

She wanted to test DX's ability to apply textual knowledge to paintings.

"The painting is related to that bookâ ª ¯!" she hinted.

DX thought for a whileâ ª ¯

"Okâ ª ¯ I get it. It is Thetis dipping her son Achilles into Styx River, to make him immortalâ ª ¯!" DX said pointing a finger to her

Project DX

"Gotcha!" she said with a smile "I am Macy by the way, personal secretary of Dr. Vidimus"

DX shook hands with her. He couldn't remove his gaze from her.

Tring tring tring

Immediately Macy checked her PDA

From: Vidimus

Message: Allow DX to enter my office for personal discussion

"DX! Vidimus wants to see you! go on" she said wading off.

He got up walked across the narrow passageway. Synergy Simons came out of Vidimus's room. He had a serpentine smile.

DX skeptically entered the room. Vidimus had the look of a bulldog. On seeing DX, his looks worsened [back citation needed: Someone warns DX of Vidimus's lousy behavior]. He scornfully asked DX to take his seat. He sat down with a sulky feeling.

"Are you out of your mind DX" he started scolding "We missed a golden opportunity!"

"What happened?" DX asked unsure of what they missed

"You left Tormod alive!"

"But I slipped!" DX interrupted

"But after that both of you were simply looking at each other like lost lovers!" Vidimus scorned

DX didn't know how to tackle this. Vidimus was looking at him in anticipation. DX didn't know what exactly he wanted

"I want an answer DX" he said fixing his gaze intently at him

Stuck with the wrong boss DX thought

"Hmmm! but he ordered his troops not to harm me! it is only logical that I do not harm him!"

Vidimus moved a little back.

"I still do not think you are clear about your vision!" he said a little calm this time

"I still can't understand the purpose of killing Frizzy! he was! he was such a great person" DX said fixing his gaze on Frizzy's picture across the room [back citation needed: in DX's previous visit to Vidimus, Frizzy's pic must be mentioned: front citation needed: in DX's next visit, Frizzy's pic must be removed]

"DX! imagine what would have happened if you did not kill Frizzy! he has maximum power over UN and he could well lure many important officials into terrorism!"

Project DX

"But sirâ his former actions all were for benefit of the worldâ!"

"That was no guarantee that his future actions would be" Vidimus stressed

DX was unsatisfied.

"You kind of saved the world from a possible hazard. Congrats for that" Vidimus said save a smile

He gave DX his office room number. 101.

"Tomorrow is the day of your oath. That is where active duty starts" Vidimus said shaking hands with DX.

"Wish you all the best" he said as DX turned to leave

"Thank you sir" DX said with a smile. He left towards refreshment room. DX didn't want to rush to his office. He was wobbly hungry having not eaten anything from morning.

DX had the guilty feeling of having killed two people. Perhaps he was not born to do the killing. He always figured himself to be a scientist sitting in a complex laboratory and doing research on nano-genetics.

He entered the refreshments room. A robot came walking near him. It had a panel in its hands.

Select your order please it said in a robotic tone

DX selected chicken-pepper pizza with garlic beef and coffee. Macy joined him after a while. She looked very slim compared to what she ate.

"Can you direct to my office?" DX asked her

She took him through another narrow corridor and then another. DX was doubtful if he could ever find his way back. Finally, 101 appeared.

"Come inâ let's talk" DX invited her pressing his hands against the finger print recognizer on the door.

"Oh noâ! Viddums must have some work for meâ!" she said in a sorrowful tone

"No problem" DX said entering in "Thanks"

"Welcomeâ! do call me if you need anything"

DX nodded. He felt private at last in his room. It was beautifully decorated with dynamic paintings. The paintings were changing constantly. DX sat at his desk. His PC was connected to internet. DX logged onto

<http://www.illumine.com/mail>

IllumineMail.com - The Merger of All major Mail Service Providers

Press your right thumb on screen for finger print scanning

DX pressed his right thumb on screen. His finger print was detected.

Project DX

1 new mail message

Sender: 999911290012@einstos.threadA-90Mail.xworld

DX, hiâ this is your friend Tormod

I just wanted to inform you about a new war machine Russia has manufactured. It is called the SEER. No, war machine is not used as a literary sense. SEER truly is a single machine that is capable of winning a whole modern war. Yes it can.

It is made of highly indestructible materials known to resist even high power lasers. It is equipped with all possible modern weapons, from plasma weapon systems to destroy enemies nearby to guided missile systems with dual core chips to destroy combat crafts and ships.

If this didn't seem enough, it has a star force shield over it which can absorb incoming bombs and missiles. It has a powerful AI to control it. There are still many mysteries about this magnificent machine. I will email you them.

If the defense order ever tries to put you against the SEER, by all costs refuse the mission. It seems you told Angel that you can face any enemy? I can tell you, you definitely are not powerful enough for SEER. So take care

Lovingly

Tormod Guldvog

The Rescue Order

DX couldn't reply back. He couldn't understand what his email address was. Tormod seemed to have masked his email address with IP Spoofing, a problem left unsolved since the 90s. It was required so that he couldn't be tracked back.

"May I come in?" a voice came. It was a very calm voice.

"Yesâ !" DX said pretending to concentrate on his monitor. Synergy came in with a typical smile. He switched on the TV on the far right of the room.

"Let's watch some TVâ !" he invited

DX had no other work now anyhow. He went and sat on the adjacent couch. Simons turned on the *illumineNews* channel

The United Nations building was shown.

Flash News: The Rescue Order - Mystiques murder Frizzy Max, general secretary of United Nations.

Flash News: Bravery by team lead by DX, the bio-kid saves vital documents at the United Nations

DX couldn't believe what he was seeing

"It was I who killed Frizzy Maxâ ! the rescue order had them on their sideâ !" DX revolted

Project DX

"There are a lot of people who love Frizzy. If we tell that you killed him, opposition may arise for the defense order. Now they will hate the rescue order even more" Simons remarked calmly

"I feel it is an insult to his memoryâ peopleâ!" DX stammered. He really didn't want to be the one people hate

"DXâ I understand that you are the chosen oneâ I we here at defense order want to make you an icon. A people's hero" Simons replied

DX wore puzzled look.

"I suggest you leave home. You seem tired" he said

DX was thinking of the same thing. Anyway, it was a very hectic day. Alice's copter was waiting outside

"Can you take me home?" he asked her

"Sureâ I hop in" she said. The copter lifted off skillfully from the scenic view of Styx River

"DXâ when were you born?" she asked sensing his silence on the way

"That is a difficult questionâ I because I was createdâ I not clonedâ I but my dad says I was tested OK" he said

"Hmmâ I let me see" she said letting go of the controls and opened her PDA.

"Hey!" DX screamed "Carefulâ I you might lose balance"

She immediately returned to her console.

"The astronomy calendar on my PDA says you are a rabbit" she smirked.

"But I am an androidâ I!" DX said taking the PDA from her

The copter landed in front of DX's home. His mom was waiting with a jubilant smile. As soon as he got down, she hugged him. DX bade goodbye to Alice. The copter took off

"My dear sonâ I you saved vital documents from the UNâ I!" she said proudly. Groups of people around the neighborhood clapped. Some kids came around and started taking his photos and autographs. DX entered in.

"God will never forgive the rescue order for the murder of Frizzy Max, he was such a great man" his mom said dropping a tear. DX couldn't imagine the consequence of what could have happened if Styx told media the truth.

DX was programming some games on his PC in his room. This was his favorite pastime. He heard some noise downstairs. Two people were talking. One was the voice of his dad. The other was a familiar voice. DX immediately raced down.

He saw Dr. Fermann with his dad. On seeing DX, his face brightened.

"Ahâ I." Fermann said "DXâ I the handsome magnificent lad who saved the day"

Project DX

DX smiled guiltily.

"I think I must take leave now professor" he said to K2 "I will send you the report soon"

"Goodnight DX" Fermann winked and left majestically.

DX and K2 had coffee in terrace. He suddenly remembered Tormod seeing the empty terrace of the Guldvog Family. Tormod and he used to play a lot on terrace when they were kids. Lucky no-one ever fell down from there. He saw an old lady hitting her head on a stone in a corner of the road. "She must have been inflicted with HIV2" K2 said

"Dadâ should I have killed Tormod?" DX asked remembering the atrocities Mystiques were doing

"Not as of nowâ but once you take the oathâ you will be forced to do so. Remember, duty first, relationships next"

DX remembered the oath scheduled next morning.

"What is this oath about?" he asked looking at stars above

"It is the most intense programming of duty inside youâ to make you ready for any kind of mission" K2 said "You will find about it tomorrow"

DX sat in front of TV and switched on *illumineNews*. He was surprised to see Synergy Simons on TV.

Flash News: Simons is the representative for next UN election of general secretary

Flash News: Simons is a Nigerian by birth, not American.

"Dadâ !" DX called "See thisâ !"

K2 came and had a glance on the TV

"Do you know him?" DX asked

"Synergy Simonsâ ! yesâ !" he said rather unsurprised

"He is an American right? Now he is being shown as a Nigerian"

K2 sat near DX.

"Very few people if any actually know Simons. The UN needs a representative from USâ ! to actually maintain world peaceâ !but the world will reject a representative from the super powersâ ! so it is a lie for world peace" he said sipping black coffee

"But to meâ lit more or less seems an attempt by America to dominate world politics" DX said dismissively "By lying"

"It is natural DXâ !" K2 said proudly "America is an antidote for the planet. See how they effectively protected world peace single handedlyâ ! fighting Talibans, German Nazis, Al-Qaeda terroristsâ ! and now the Mystiques"

Project DX

DX felt that completely true.

"DXâ. The defense order has an amazing goal not only for Mystiques, but also for future world peace. By being an active part of eradicating the rescue order, you have an opportunity to become a world hero" K2 said patting him "But for that, you must work hardâ and be loyal"

DX nodded. He yawned.

"You seem to feel sleepy" K2 said yawning himself

"Yeahâ good night dad" DX said as he left for his bedroom.

Being on bed signifies the most important part of the whole day. It gives time to recap what happened today. DX thought of his dad. He knew a lot about Styx. But he was just an ordinary professor. Tormod's image appeared in DX's mind. He missed him. In a way, Angel was correct. Friends are forever. What on earth could have tempted Tormod to such a haunted placeâ where he has to hide from police, from people, from the defense order? He ordered his troops against shooting him. Though the bullets wouldn't harm his prefabricated skin, Tormod was concerned for him. DX smiled.

I will never hurt you Tormod He thought

Chapter 13: Beyond Duty

The board room had too much of air conditioning. DX felt dried off completely.

He sometimes felt his over excitement bad which made him arrive fifteen minutes early. He played around with his mobile phone. The mobile made little sense. All that communication was now done through DX Cube.

Few disheveled papers were lying on corner of the room. DX went to pick them up

"Pleaseâ they are confidential documents" A camera from above the room spoke.

"Damn the surveillance" DX thought. Styx was so much of surveillance everywhere that staying in an isolated room is equivalent of being watched by 10 people in a room. He relaxed back to his seat.

He browsed his mobile. The RSS news reader updated automatically

Flash: Suspect Involvement of Russian PM with the global Terrorists

DX couldn't believe the news. The news was from a trusty source, USAToday.com. The word trusty never mattered to him anymore especially after he was falsely portrayed to be a hero who had nothing to do with Frizzy Max's death. He nevertheless clicked the news to know moreâ

USAToday.com - News Flash

Suspect Involvement of Russian PM, Volkanov with the global Terrorists, the Mystiques.

Styx intelligence in Russia recently identified Russian Administration led by Prime Minister Volkanov incline towards the benefit of the Mystiques, global terrorists.

The news came into flash when few rescue order cadets were allowed entry into Russian Advanced Defence Research Facility, where the SEER, war machine was being secured.

If this plot unveils to be true, it could be chaos plus Russian domination of the planet. 'Immediate solution would be overthrow of Volkanov's government before it goes too far', Styx intelligence strategists identified.

DX felt this incomprehensible. Mystique's plot so far seemed to be a bunch of teenagers doing serious shit for fun. He felt this reason shit. Now truth seemed to be unveiling slowly. Maybe it was all a well organized terrorist plot behind which Russia secretly hid. Before he could think more, an elderly man entered inâ

"Helloâ I am Andyâ" he introduced

"I'mâ"

"I know you DX" he smiled "It took me almost a week for me to get an appointment with you"

They sat down. This guy seemed pretty ordinary to him. Definitely a non-Styx guy, DX thought.

"You might be wondering who I really am" Andy began speaking crossing his fingers "I am just an ordinary citizenâ who lost his childrenâ and wifeâ to Trapdeathâ I feel lucky not to be infected"

Project DX

DX listened patiently

"But every second of my life I spend like I am almost dead" Andy continued. A little tear formed near his eyes "These bastards, the Mystiques defaced the whole society. What do you think?"

"Hmmm!" DX thought "I think them to be a bunch of unethical youngsters we shall curb them and protect the society"

DX wanted to be diplomatic when talking about the defense order.

"It is this very society that is responsible for Mystiques too much violent games too many murders on TV drove these kids" Andy hit his hands to the table.

DX listened closely. He felt Andy had a point. The tear in his eyes accumulated but never fell.

"When I found out that defense order hired you I felt finally things were going to get all right and when you bravely saved documents of the United Nations, I knew you were more than capable!"

"Thanks" DX said with a pleasant smile

"My request DX please destroy the Mystiques at any cost because I don't want anyone to suffer the same fate I face imagine being cut off from your loved family forever!" Andy said as a tear drop fell down. DX consoled him. He could understand the pain.

Andy turned to leave.

DX felt reality drawing closer to him. Several people had their hopes on him. He must not let them down.

Vidimus entered in with two more officials.

"DX!" he said "Meet the Men in Black, secret intelligence from Area 51 base camp US military division"

They shook hands with him. They were completely dressed in black coat, black neck tie with black goggles. In contrast to their clothes, DX felt an absolute idiot to have come in t-shirt and jeans.

"Today, you are going to take the oath of Styx" Vidimus said. He handed DX a bond paper. DX went through it carefully. DX couldn't help reading some major points again and again!

A1: The defense order is not responsible for any damage to my life

A2: I solemnly vow to combat terrorism and bring peace to the world

â !â !â !â !â !â !

A32: I agree that I would be tried criminally if I try to escape the defense order in middle of a strategic mission

There was a column below for him to sign. DX called his dad. K2 read the bond paper through DX's camera eyes.

Project DX

Intercom: K2: its fine DXâ it's just a formality. Sign it.

DX signed it and gave it to Vidimus.

"*Camera Off*" he said disconnecting K2

"I had a discussion regarding accusations from court relating to murder of Frizzy Max that you committedâ!"

DX felt this super awkward.

"Heyâ I was ordered to kill himâ!" DX smirked

"Yesâ but you are not policeâ or member of an armyâ!" Vidimus repented "So, we have decided to give you the post of Styx special agentâ. A very coveted post DXâ which only top officials like Synergy holdâ!"

"What is special about special agent?" DX asked puzzled

Vidimus handed him an identity cardâ DX received the shock of his life

DX

Styx Special Operations Agent

As per Styx agreement with nations, DX as a special Operations Agent with his team is **Licensed to Kill or Arrest**

He was licensed to kill!

"Is this a part of Styx agreement?" DX asked

"It was also a matter of huge argument and many nations wanted it to be removedâ! But they accepted later fearing retreat from UN. Any team led by you is licensed to kill anyone you feel fit to kill"

After getting few more documents signed by DX, Vidimus left.

INTERCOM: Angel: Hi DXâ can you come to coffee shop. You know the drillâ! camera offâ! aloneâ! for a friendly meet

"What the fuck?" DX thought. How could she get access to his intercom? This was super invasion of his privacy.

"How could you access my secure intercom network?" DX asked

INTERCOM: Angel: Foot Secureâ! Xalo in our team had it decrypted in minutesâ! anyone from the rescue order can contact you nowâ!

DX thought of reporting this to Styx authorities.

INTERCOM: Angel: Are you coming or not?

Project DX

"I am coming" DX said immediately and went towards the coffee shop.

Angel was sitting in a corner of the shop with a cup of coffee in front of her. On seeing DX, her face brightened like a candle that lit automatically. She smiled profusely.

DX smiled back. He sat near her.

"Soâ what's interesting?" he asked.

"This" she said handing him a huge sheet

Trapdeath after Styx's arrival

Gradual increase at an average rate of 17% per year

Drug abuse since Styx's arrival

Gradual increase at an average rate of 23% per year

Source: XWorld.einstos.thread67.survey7

"I think it must be inability of Styx to curb the Mystiques that led to these numbersâ !" DX said confidently
"But now that I am inâ these will change"

"Hmmâ what else could be the reason?" she said cornering her eyes around DX

"I don't see any other reason" DX said looking around

"Maybeâ maybe Styx has some hands in this business" she suggested

"This is beyond limit" DX shouted. The whole cafÃ© was looking at him "Since I am a powerful agent, you are trying to lure me into your sideâ I think you yourself drew this graphsâ wait I never heard of that dummy source"

Angel gave a smile and beckoned DX to sit down.

"First of allâ !" she started "the survey is from a trusted sourceâ and next, how do you know we are the ones who are drugging and spreading Trapdeath?"

DX replied this alreadyâ

"I saw archive videos in TV channelsâ shows your sick cadets injecting lethal virus in common people. These were captured using hidden surveillance cameras in subwaysâ !" "

"Hmmâ TV channelsâ !" Angel remarked "I think it makes no sense now right? They gave false information regarding Frizzy's death"

"That was to protect integrity of Styxâ !" DX stammered. Angel started taking advantage of the situation. She handed DX a flash drive.

Project DX

"It contains some vital dataâ I check in some remote system using open source OS like Linux" she said

"Why only linux?" DX asked

"All proprietary operating systems have backdoors in them to transmit your information to NSA. So take care" she said with a sharp look

"Hmmâ I all right" DX said at last "I will go through this"

"By the wayâ I am head data interpreter of Mystiques"

Immediately two guys with huge plasma guns came from behind and put her in a gun point. Four guys from behind in turn put the two Styx cadets in a gun point. They dropped the plasma guns. Picking the guns, the rescue order cadets started walking away

"Angel" DX called her back "I don't know who sent these clownsâ I really am innocent"

DX hated this feeling. He was sitting alone in Vidimus's office waiting for him to come from the toilet. Another barking session would start in few minutes.

Vidimus came out. He looked quite angry. He sat down in a majestic way and stared at DX

"It's time for interrogationâ I follow me" he barked.

While on the way to interrogation room, DX suddenly felt he might be arrested if he did not give proper answers. The room was semi dark with a table lamp in middle of room. Simons was already inside the room.

"Doesn't this guy have any work at the CIA office?" DX thought. He sat down as in a corner chair

"Our troops indicated your refusal to attack the rescue order cadet who is a head data interpreter. Given the fact that their bullets could do no harm to your prefabricated skinâ I why didn't you attack?" Vidimus questioned

"I wasn't in any missionâ !" DX quoted

"Sometimes" Simons said calmly "You must think beyond your duty DX. Your goal is to destroy the Mystiques at any cost"

"I hated the idea of a bunch of soldiers following me" DX said sternly

"By sending you alone, you ended up getting hit by a bunch of rescue order cadetsâ I we can afford any risk to you agentâ I you cost us several billion dollarsâ I make sure you are worth it" said Simons as he left in a huff.

DX hated Simon's way of speaking. He felt trapped among a bunch of idiots who knew nothing but yet reprimanded him.

*K2 Villa
Los Angeles*

Project DX

K2 used the automatic razor too often these days. The door bell rang. He opened the door cautiously. It was Vidimus.

"Hello K2" he said brightly "Is DX inside?"

"Yesâ!" K2 said "Sleepingâ!"

The external view from K2's Villa seemed awesome. Vidimus had no mood to leave the terrace. K2 was thinking hard.

"DXâ! he has been a little emotional these days because of killing his own icon with his own handsâ!" K2 said in a sad tone

"Hmmâ! I understand" Vidimus said in an ignoring tone "We are thinking of sending DX to Russia for a strategic missionâ!"

"It's ridiculous" K2 interrupted "The SEER could take his life!"

"Calm down K2" Vidimus said sharply "DX is the best strategist we ever had"

K2 looked confused

"DXâ! is everything to me" K2 said in a calm tone

After few hours of persuasion, K2 reluctantly agreed by his mind. His heart still thought of DX. But after all, evil needs to be eliminated and if DX is the chosen one, so be it, K2 thought

Chapter 14: A mission you just can't refuse

DX had not much work in office these days. He tried freelancing for extra bucks. It was not as if he wasn't paid enough. He was given a total salary of 5 million per month in addition to free travelling allowances in a black beauty copter. DX guessed it was just for the sake of fun.

He registered himself as *coderdon*. The first project he received was :

Project Title: XCrossword

Description: Create a program that can generate crosswords from a standard Oxford English dictionary for varied sizes of board (n X n)

Duration: 1 week

Payment: 5999 Worlds (Auction)

Company: Anagram Association

DX auctioned for the project for 6000 Worlds. A company representative connected to him. He had the name 100d. DX wondered funny names people tend to keep when they reach online names that contain combination of alphabets and numbers.

He immediately fired his Python editor and started coding the program.

SecureChat: Illumine.ChatSecure.FreeLance21

100d: Max time one week man think and tell

coderdon: You have given me too much time

100d: That's wat jazz_coder boasted dude. Lol. Can you do it in a week?

coderdon: I need just 20 mins !

100d: Stop fuckin me man

coderdon: Jus wait and see

100d: I don't wanna waste 20 mins to wait for your joke dude

After 20 minutes

100d: This is crazy shit my goodness !. Take 8000 Worlds

100d: How cud yo do it in shit time man?

Coderdon: Keep your Worlds with you and tell everyone around that DX coded for you

DX logged off.

Project DX

100d might have lost it now, DX imagined. Before he could celebrate something, there was a knock at the door. Before he could say come in, they entered. It was Fermann and the Geeky looking scientist.

"Hey I thought my augmentations were complete" DX quoted.

"Greetings" Fermann wished "I have a good newsâ we have got our augmentation kits here. Few new modules needs to be loaded into you"

The geeky scientist came and eagerly shook hands with DX

"I find it very coool to see our augmentations work wonder in UN mission" he said adjusting his huge glasses

"Thank you" DX said excitedly "What are the new augmentations?"

"We call it Bruce Lee Packageâ a collection of 80 martial artsâ including Karate at topmost level, Judo etcâ !" Fermann said sternly.

DX almost fell down from his seat. Knowing 80 marital arts seemed too much for him. He must be much powerful than any other person.

"So where is the room?" DX asked getting up and starting to remove his tie.

"Heyâ there is no need to strip" Fermann said closing his eyes and beckoning DX to stop "I got the device right here"

Fermann removed a headphone sort of device with something to cover the eyes and handed it to DX. DX wrapped the device around his eyes and put the googles.

Suddenly a semi-transparent menu opened up in DX's eyes with a message

No modules available

The geeky scientist removed a disc from inside which showed something flying on the outer disc and handed it over to Dr. Fermann

"What is this CD-ROM?" DX asked looking amused

"This is a nano ROM. Has nano encoded genetic data inside. It has the required modules" Fermann hinted as he placed the ROM in a holder on the right of the head phones.

The menu refreshed itself to display

80 modules found select_all install

Judo

Karate

Kung -fu

Project DX

â.

"Select the *Select-All* option on the top right of the menu" Fermann suggested

DX maneuvered using his palms and clicked the select all button and then install button. Suddenly he felt his head whirlâ his eyes had the message

DX system shut down

He fell down flat on the floor.

"Are you sure it works?" Fermann asked the geek

"Yesâ all integration tests were successful" he replied affirmatively.

DX woke up in a haze. It looked like an empty room with a lazer illuminated bulb on top. DX looked around in amazement. To his surprise, a really monstrous looking guy was facing him. Seeing the hour-glass logo on his hands, DX realized he was standing face to face against a rescue order cadet.

Seeing DX get up, he came closer and raised his legs to kick him. DX suddenly caught his legs and turned him around. DX was able to use a combination of marital arts without giving the 7 foot monster a chance to even hurt his shadow. In few seconds, the terrorist was down.

The door on the right opened up and two more monstrous guys entered in with Mystique logo in their hands. DX was able to jump and combat both of them without getting hurt even a little. Soon both of them were down, bleeding with broken bones.

The lights opened up and in came Dr. Fermann and Vidimus clapping.

"That was crazy" DX responded

"We wanted to test you" Vidimus said brightly "â in a real situation"

"I had half of my soul lost there" DX said panting

"Real life situations will be worse than this DX" Vidimus said in a warning tone "Come over to the briefing roomâ you have a new mission tonight"

DX had absolutely no idea where he was. So he followed Vidimus. When he came out, a board read

Styx US - Training

"What is the mission about sir?" DX asked Vidimus on the way

"Read the new hype in the newspapers today?" Vidimus asked amusingly

"Yeahâ !" DX replied "The rescue order started planting secret bombs in public locationsâ the bastardsâ !"

"More to itâ !" Vidimus pointed "Russia is joining their bandwagon"

Project DX

They entered an elevator. Fermann took leave of them and disappeared into the other end of darkness wearing goggles. It must be night vision goggles, DX thought. Vidimus pressed the UP button

"Has it been confirmed?" DX asked feeling absolutely unsure of what media said these days

Vidimus looked at him with a proud face. DX was sure something cool about Styx was coming this way

"100 percent confirmed" he said "Styx intelligence at the United States hacked into Russian defense website. The logs clearly indicated a close bonding between themâ unfortunately"

The lift door opened. They went around few corners and DX found himself in Styx main corridor. He felt he needed to explore the defense order office properly.

They entered the briefing room. He saw an armed forces group. What was more surprising was that all armed forces had the hour glass logo tied to their hands with *The Rescue Order* written neatly. DX feared it he would be forced to fight these people. Handling 3 to 4 seemed OK but a whole army seemed ridiculous.

His doubt was cleared the very moment when he saw Wang Tee and Victor among the forces waving to him. They smiled at DX. He sat near them.

"How are you feeling Wangâ I thought they shot you!" DX asked in a surprised tone

"Erâ they actually shot a needle called *soul saver*. I just made me unconscious" Wang said

DX remembered the *soul saver* needle Angel showed him. It has become a big confusion to him about aim of the rescue order. On one side, they seem to be good people not hurting a fly on the defense order side. On the other side, they are masterminds in mass genocide due to virus, drug abuse and now bombs in public places.

But it did not matter to DX. It seemed clear to him that they were actually trying to lure the defense order cadets to their side. For instance, Angel was trying to get him to their side by showing fake statistics.

DX looked around. There were no Russian soldiers.

"What's with the uniformâ why are you all wearing Mystique coats?" DX asked bewildered

"We are as ignorant as you are" Wang said raising his brows. Obviously he expected DX to know about this.

Vidimus's slide opened on screenâ

Attack on Russia: Operation Inca

Overthrow of Volkanov's Leadership

Primary Goals:

- *At any cost, assassinate Russian Prime Minister, Volkanov Betteridge*
- *Keep DX alive till the end*

Secondary Goals:

- *Recover secret documents as an unofficial mission*

Project DX

Mission Hints:

- *Evade the SEER War machine at all costs. It is powerful and indestructible*

There was chaos in the room. Protests rose from many people. DX felt

extra brave and got up. The room became calm and focused on DX.

"Do you have a problem DX?" Vidimus enquired "We didn't even start the briefingâ I am on the first damn S-L-I-D-E"

"It looks like Russia vs Rest of the World and the assassination partâ I can't do it" he said sternly and sat down

Neither can we. This is stupidâ. This is political terrorismâ came shouts from different corners of the room.

"When will you guys stop looking at the smaller pictureâ look at the big pictureâ Russia is joining hands with the rescue orderâ this can spell trouble to the whole damn world" said Vidimus in a rhyming tone

"What would happen after we assassinate him?" an Indian guy from corner questioned "What will happen to the world's view on Styx?"

Vidimus looked at him sternly and repliedâ

"We put the blame on the rescue order"

Now they got why they are given rescue order coat. Few people felt this utmost stupid as they started rising from their seatâ

"If you try to leaveâ you will be arrested under attempt to escape an armed force in between a strategic missionâ Styx Employment Rule A32" Vidimus said with a mischievous smile.

They came and took their seat.

"This is no forceâ!" Vidimus said still knowing that he was forcing them "You are all children of the world. We need to stay together to combat terrorism and bring peace and happinessâ to our children"

Several people in the room became calm.

"The world needs usâ!" Vidimus said now almost stumbling upon words "â they trust usâ it is not Russia vs Worldâ it is World vs Volkanovâ a person who is aiding Mystique a group who have already caused more than a billion casualties and stop at nothing to destroy the innocent onesâ the high adrenaline youthâ bastards"

Vidimus looked around and askedâ

"I won't force anyone into thisâ!" he said finally "Are you with meâ with the World in this mission?"

"Yes..." came the answer in chorus.

Project DX

"Is it fine with you DX?" Vidimus asked

"Don't worry sir" DX replied "We will winâ Operation Inca will be a success"

Vidimus gave a wide smile. Rest of the slides discussed tactics and common tips. He then left

"All right" a tall guy with Styx uniform spoke "I am Mr. Alex Wayne, special coordinator of this mission. Helicopters are waiting for youâ board themâ you will be escorted to a secret Mafia group under cover from Styx headquarters. You will receive mission strategy thereâ MOVEâ MOVEâ"

A guy came to DX and made him wear rescue order coat. He went to the courtyard where copters were taking the cadets in. All copters had the defense order logo painted to them. This is primarily to make the other nation believe a peaceful Styx force is arriving.

DX boarded his personal copter with Alice.

"Do you know where to take me?" DX asked half closing the door.

"Yeahâ!" she said "Your de-briefing will be today eveningâ lot of timeâ so I am taking you to meet a very special personâ!"

"We don't have timeâ but we can meet if time is shortâ who is it?" he asked shutting the door.

"You'll find out soon" she said lifting the copter

Alice took the copter off the scenic landscape of Styx River. The copter landed half an hour later. *It still must be America* DX thought. The landscape seemed familiar to himâ it was Proving Grounds!

He got down and looked around. A familiar girl approached near him. It was Angel. She looked enthusiastically at his coat from bottom to top and then fixed her gaze at the hour glass logo DX was sporting.

"Hmmmâ an hour glass logoâ and what does it say below itâ. Ahâ! *The Rescue Order*" Angel said with a wide smile "So when did you guys join Mystiques?"

DX put his head down. Alice was a spy for the rescue order.

Chapter 15: The XWORLD

DX and Angel walked down the lane towards the light post at Proving grounds. To DX, Angel looked much brighter today. A copter flew above him. It took him a moment to realize that it was Alice's copter. It was better she took it off lest she be spotted by defense order cadets.

DX had his camera eyes off. So it was safe for Angel. It was important to be friends and spies together.

"It is a big surprise to me!" DX said revoltingly "Alice, my *personal pilot* is a spy for the rescue order!"

"Hmmm! if this knocks your head off, you will be amazed to know how deep in defense order hierarchies we have spies! we know every step your order makes!" Angel said proudly.

"That must be a rotten lie. Every communication channel in this planet *according to your flash disk data* is owned by Illumine Corp that established the defense order. Any spies within us would have been caught long back" DX said dismissively

Angel gave a short laugh and then replied!

"Then what about us? We are spying on each other. Nobody is able to track us" Angel quoted. DX was thinking of an answer and abruptly replied!

"If you are so much satisfied with spies in the defense order hierarchy and if you do know every step that it takes! then why do you have this mutual spying with me? It's useless right?"

"Ok! let me accept! I am not trying to get any info from you, I am just trying to get you on our side" Angel said frankly. They had reached the light pole.

"I knew this!" DX said "Even the soul saver is a conspiracy to get many defense order cadets to your side"

"Then why do you promote my interference into your time! why not just take out your gun and shoot me off?" she asked

"Because! . Because! . You are my friend"

Angel first felt DX was evading her question. But from his voice, she felt this to be true.

"DX! do you know where I come from?" she asked suddenly

"Yeah! Atlantis buried 300 miles underground! some mythological shit you want us to believe in!" DX said humorously

Angel became stiff.

"It is true! didn't you observe how I just appeared out of nowhere and then disappeared into nowhere the last time here?" she reminded him

DX thought about it. Did she just run away? No, then he would have easily spotted her. And from where did she appear all of a sudden the first time they met?

Project DX

"May be you hid in the dark?" DX said after a big pause "That's the best guess, but that seems impossible"

Angel smiled tactfully.

"Do-Do you really come from underground?" he asked giving up.

Angel sighed as she pressed her finger on the device on the light pole. Immediately it glowed in florescent colors and four slabs opened on the concrete floor revealing an opening. There was a room with certain electronic devices inside. Angel got down and beckoned him to get in. They sat on adjacent chairs. She operated on a computer and the slabs closed.

"What exactly is this?" DX asked looking golly around him. The computers looked quite unique with hologram based user interfaces. He virtually felt himself to be in movie setting of Star Wars. Angel was able to pick and play with virtual objects on the hologram.

"DX..." Angel said looking at him intently with her green eyes "I need a promise"

"Go onâ"

"Today's meeting will be NO POLITICSâ friendly meet only" she said strictly

"That's easy"

"And you just have to enjoy tonightâ and do not tell anyone what you are going to see 300 miles underground" she said a little low in tone

"I promiseâ where exactly are we going?" DX asked unsure whether she was speaking the truth.

"To a place called XWorldâ a wonderful place only next to heavenâ 300 miles underground"

DX wanted to shout but Angel's eyes were speaking the truth. Hologram of an ear appeared on the hologram monitor. Angel spoke to itâ

This is Angel with DXâ he is here for a peaceful visit

A 3D Text appeared on screen

XWorld.Einstos.ThreadA33

A feeble voice came backâ

You are authorizedâ countdown startsâ 5â 4â 3â 2â 1â

The box started moving down.

"Hey are we going underground?" DX asked

Angel nodded with a pleasant smile. DX decided to sleep guessing the amount of time an elevator can take to go down 300 miles. But no sooner did he close his eyes for relaxation than she woke him up.

"Get upâ we have arrived" Angel shoved him with her almost dimensionless palms.

Project DX

"Huhâ ¡ its just been 10 minutesâ ¡ we couldn't have travelled 300 miles undergroundâ ¡ are you units different at XWorld?" he asked feeling lazy to get up

"Noâ ¡ actually the elevator's drag is balanced by a buoyant flow of liquid that surrounds itâ ¡ so you don't actually feel it going that fast underground" she said

INTERCOM: Vidimus: DX where are youâ ¡ turn your camera eyes on

DX knew Vidimus couldn't hear what he says unless his camera eyes were on. The camera subsystem acted as a transmitter of both video and audio in front of him. He decided to let Vidimus guess his location. XWorld seemed more interesting to him this moment than burning his ass trying to kill some famous personality

She pressed on some holograms. The lift doors opened up and a street shopping corner showed up. For a while DX was mesmerized by the appearance of street.

Laser lights glowed on top of shops. DX went to first shop. The keeper was selling some robots. He ventured and asked what exactly these stupid looking machines were.

"Don't judge by appearance, these are powerful machines" the shop keeper replied. He was old with white hair and beard. He looked too slim wearing a half open shirt exposing his bony ribs.

He got out one robot from the top and placed it in front of DX. It had a very complicated mechanism but he was able to understand how it was fixed. It definitely was hand-made.

"You just have to place a milk pack, a coffee pack and it will take care of giving you coffee" he said proudly.

"Hey we already have this in our worldâ ¡ coffee maker" DX said dismissively

"Ohâ ¡ I will show you something that you would have never seen" the shop keeper said in a challenging tone and went in. DX turned to look at Angel, but she was busy seeing some flowers on the other corner. The shop keeper came out with a big giant robot following him. It must be at least 8 feet tall.

"Introducingâ ¡. Robo Cop" he said.

"How does this exactly work?" DX asked looking at the magnificent robot which was covered with a cool shield.

"Just try taking any item and running away with it" the shop keeper challenged. DX took the most light weight robot and started running away. Before he could cross across the shop, he felt himself lifted high up. He turned around to see the robot's hand extended like a spring and was holding him up.

"Get me down!" DX commanded. The old guy went near the robot and switched some wires behind it. It dropped DX on the floor and the robot he was holding broke

"Ohâ ¡ are you all rightâ ¡" the shop keeper asked lifting DX up.

"Yesâ ¡" DX said "It was an amazing botâ ¡. wowâ ¡. But teach it how to drop people safely"

"Naah" the shop keeper quoted "you definitely don't want robbers to be dropped safely"

"I am Vrota from Spainâ ¡ but people call me Vroom" he said shaking hands "And you?"

Project DX

"I am DX"

"Cool nameâ I never heard of that one" Vroom said as he continued cleaning his shop.

"Cheerio" DX said as he went towards a waiting Angel. Apparently he realized he wasn't popular in XWorld.

"Let's go to my apartment" she said. DX followed her.

"Hi Angel" a tall Indian man wished on the way.

"Hi Ravi" she grinned

DX looked around the underground world. It seemed as if it was there for at least the last 50 years. XWorld seemed like normal world with restaurants, houses, Software corporations etc, but something seemed very different to DX. People looked more cheerful and joyful than anywhere else. And they definitely didn't look like a terrorist gathering.

"What is the relationship between the Mystiques and XWorld?" DX asked her suddenly

She looked at him and raised her eyebrows

"Oopsâ I forgotâ No politics" DX said with a smile

Angel nodded majestically and proceeded.

"What is the difference between XWorld and normal World?" DX asked "Everything seems similar here too"

"Very simple. XWorld is secureâ you can't have someone rob you or murder you. " Angel said

"Is it because people are good here?" DX asked

"For the most part, I would say it is because everyone here has great religious principles and particularlyâ no concept of bothering other people's business" Angel remarked "We stay calm, do our work and let other's do theirs. No politics please. We don't need someone to rule or so. We know how to rule ourselves"

They entered a small staircase on the road that led to a door below.

Kristina Angelica

Angel of all Abodes

"So is XWorld free with no government?" DX asked "This can lead to chaos"

He felt he was dwelling into Politics. Angel pressed a code at keypad attached to her door. The door opened

"Yes, we do have a neutral all time government. That neutral government is a gigantic AI computer. We have microchips installed inside us that monitor our every activity" she said. DX felt this unbelievable. Below the Earth that we know, there existed peaceful townfolk called XWorld who had an AI based government!

They entered in

Project DX

Her apartment had a beautifully decorated hall. DX guessed almost all girls are good housekeepers. A huge photo of Nikola Tesla hung in the middle of her room.

"You like Tesla's invention?" DX asked

"Yeahâ but I kinda like him more than his inventionsâ you know, he looks quite handsome"

DX raised his eye brows. But he felt it was useless. Many women fell madly in love with Tesla during his period. But he ever remained married to science and led a life of chaste.

"Do you love someone?" DX asked suddenly.

Angel looked at him strangely and saidâ

"Noâ why do you ask?"

"I was curious" DX said unsure himself of why he asked "I thought you loved only old and dead scientists"

"We must" she said sitting on the couch "It's because of them that we live such a wonderful life today"

DX felt the need for a debate. He sat near her and said

"If that is case, what about the missiles, atom bombsâ don't you think life was great when we were monkeys in jungle?"

"That is where a line comes between XWorld and normal World. XWorld is purely wonderful uses of science alone. We have an exclusive module in our government to decide if a particular technology is good from an ethical point of view"

The table had few papers that had Math equations.

"What are all these?" DX asked

"Hmmâ I am a head data interpreter of XWorld. It's my duty to see all statistics" she said

"It must be a boring job" DX said sighing "I hate statistics"

"No it isn't" she replied instantaneously "It's about collecting data and visualizing it in various formsâ and get some meaningful information from it!"

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Where are you DX?

"Damn this intercom" DX said in little frustration "Hey I got to leave"

"Okâ I will accompany you" she said. They left her apartment towards the lift. On the way, DX saw a beautiful bird with long beak. It looked like a Dodo.

"What is this bird?" he asked Angel

"It's Dodo"

Project DX

DX felt astounded.

"I know what you are thinking. Dodo was extinct centuries ago right? At XWorld, we preserved many species yet"

DX was mesmerized. This meant XWorld existed centuries ago. Before he could ask anything else, they arrived at the lift. Angel again operated the hologram device. The door shut down and the elevator started moving up.

Angel accompanied DX until the copter arrived.

"Thanks Angel for the trip but it all seems to be a mystery for me" he said

"DX" Angel said catching his hands "You are a very nice guy kill no more Volkanov is a revolutionary"

DX was surprised as to how she knew his mission. It might have been an easy guess, DX thought. First off all, Mystiques had tie-up with Volkanov and above all, he appeared in Mystique uniform in front of her.

"I will try Angel" he said "But I can't go against my duty"

She nodded. DX boarded the copter as it took off Proving Grounds in a stylish way towards Moscow

Chapter 16: Stalingrad Mission

Volgograd

1 A.M

It was getting too cold. Russia must have arrived. DX could guess it easily. Even his fabricated skin felt resistive to cold. Russian cold even stopped the determined swastika army of Nazi Germany.

The black copter stopped in an isolated corner. DX got down.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Good DX. Now Ramenstien, member of your team is approaching from far left. I am loading a map. Reach the back of parliamentary building ! I repeat, reach the back of parliamentary building

DX's retina displayed the message

Received AlphaMap.pdf

A transparent map appeared in front of DX allowing him to both look at the map and move to his destination.

DX suddenly saw a red dot in map and a tag showed him to be Ramenstien. Suddenly the red dot disappeared. DX roamed the deserted street looking for him. He lost him. On the map, he was able to spot a way to reach the back of parliament.

He suddenly sees wobbly movements of a blue dot near to him in the map. A tag near to it clearly showed something that shocked DX.

The SEER - War Machine

"What the fuck is SEER doing here?" DX thought. For a while he wanted to see the magnificent machine. But loving his life, he took a side step to an alley to escape its path.

He was unfortunate, as the SEER also seemed to converge into the same alley. DX clenched to the wall hoping for the last moment that SEER would take a detour. How wrong he was when he saw a bright stream of light. He just hoped that the machine would go straight. A huge tanker sort of machine entered into his view.

It was coated with a glossy material which effectively hid its interiors. The most amazing component was its wheels. It was made out of rubber thread gearing metallic tyres. From the flexibility of tyres, DX could guess it was made of nano rubber tubes. What shocked DX more was that it had a 360 degree camera on top. It identified him and effortlessly turned towards the gully. DX could hear the War Machine speak.

Contact Found ! Moving in ! Scanning Contact !. Unidentified Contact

It was moving slowly towards him. DX looked up to see if he could cross the wall. It was a huge wall. But SEER had no weapons in any angle. He thus remained clenched.

The SEER stopped near him and suddenly two little holes opened on its sides. DX guessed that to be laser gun inset.

Project DX

It spoke in a machine tone

WHO ARE YOU

"I am Thomas, a rescue order cadet" DX replied gathering courage

THOMAS? NOT IN DATABASE. CONFIRM IDENTITY OR U WILL BE BLASTED OFF

DX knew his fabricated skin can't resist laser bullets. He could be blasted to death

"I - I am a new comerâ. Yeah" he said

NEW COMER? WAITâ SCANNING MYSTIQUE DATABASEâ.

SCANNINGâ.

THOMAS MARK - 20

IMAGE: NO IMAGE

OKâ LET ME SCAN YOUR FACEâ.

A device came out and it scanned DX's face.

YOU CAN GOâ HAVE NICE TERRORIST DAY.

The SEER moved off very fast across another corner. DX stared breathing hard. He was scared to death. That was one hell of a machine. It was noiseless in motion. DX could guess it's weird shape was because of its anti radar capability.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: All right DX?

"Fuck you" DX said "You were quite all this time!"

INTERCOM: Vidimus: DXâ if I intercomed u in front of SEER, it could trap signals and identify you.

"That was close" DX said rubbing sweat off his forehead

INTERCOM: Vidimus: You were lucky. There really was a new comer called Thomas among the Mystique

"Yeahâ more luck was that he did not have a photograph" DX said

DX knew it was not total luck. He saw Thomas's name among the data sheets in Angel's apartment. The sheet was entitled "*New recruits*"

Seeing SEER not so hostile to him now, he moved out. He started moving towards the back of the parliament. He heard noise of someone walking fast. His map showed Ramenstien coming behind him. DX immediately turned back. Being in pairs gives more courage.

The SEER was passing in front of Ramenstien. He started firing at it. A blue energy shield formed immediately and effectively absorbed the bullet. A laser light blasted Ramenstien off leaving him shredded

Project DX

into several parts.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: SEER might become suspicious. Run now.

DX ran through the deserted streets trying to find a way to back of parliament from the mazy map. He saw a group of rescue order cadets waiting in a corner. First he thought of shooting them.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Good DX. That is team alpha. Go and join them.

DX was amazed at how well masked they were. He recognized Wang and went to them.

The team first uses a Wi-Fi scanner to scan all Wireless hotspots. Most of them indicated the cameras on top of pillars that surrounded the parliament. They hacked into it and replayed the video feed.

The team then started moving towards the gate with masks as is customary with rescue order cadets. A guard stopped them.

"We are cadet A32. We are here to meet the PM" Wang said

"Wait a secondâ aren't you guys supposed to come from the front?" he asked now clenching his gun more tightly.

"Yeahâ !" Wang replied instinctively "But there are mobs on the front"

"Okâ !" the guard said "Check inâ ! in the meantime I shall verify"

The team entered in. Wang looked around and spotted another guard on a watch tower above.

"Steveâ !" the guard talked in his mobile "the rescue order cadets are entering from behindâ !" "

A bullet stuck the guards' head and he dropped dead. At about the same time, the guard from the post dropped down. DX turned back and saw Wang showing thumbs up.

"That was cool Wang" he said

"Roger"

"Can we go up?" a masked girl said. Her tag read

Carla Watson - Operations

"Are you crazy?" Wang replied "The batch of Mystique must already have arrived"

INTERCOM: Zeino: Team alpha. Go to basement on left corner. Check if the guard has key to itâ ! I repeatâ ! check if the guard has key to the basement

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Trust Zeino. He is a very important contact.

"Did you all get intercom from a guy called Zeino?" Wang broadcasted around

"Yes" came the reply in chorus.

Project DX

"Did you get the trustworthy intercom from Vidimus?" he broadcasted again

"Yes" came he reply in chorus again.

DX didn't wait a moment and took the basement key from the dead guard. They headed towards the lower left corner. There indeed was a basement with a small shutter. They got inside and locked the shutter

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Team beta. Surround the parliament backyard perimeterâ I repeat surround the parliament backyard perimeter.

"Is there a team beta?" DX asked this team

"Yes" Wang replied "They are just for holding perimeters behind us"

Wang looked a real dacoit in mask and Mystique uniform.

"I wish I was in team beta. Easy life" Carla mumbled.

Team alpha from the basement dug a hole to reveal a kitchen. They shoot the chefs with silence pistol and locked the door. A fat guard tried to get in. DX opened the door remotely by hacking it with his PDA while he hid on top of a refrigerator. As soon as the guard enters, he shot him with his silence pistol.

They slowly enter the hall. One camera was scanning the entire room from a staircase above. But it could be hidden by someone standing under it. DX got an idea. One member in his team was fat. He asked him to dress up in the dead guard's clothes. He does it. He then asks the guard to wear the cap and look down till he reaches below the camera. The fat cadet goes with his head down below the camera and acts as if he lights a cigar effectively hiding the camera's view. In the meantime, the rest of team alpha entered the room above the staircase.

The fat guy was just roaming down. He felt it would be better to wait down. If any emergency comes, he could easily escape through the basement.

Suddenly a door on the side opened and a Russian soldier came. The fat guy took out his stealth pistol but it was too late. The soldier shot him and raised the alarm.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Alarm raised. Two guys take the front cover and protect the rest while the rest proceed to assassinate the PM.

Carla and another guy stayed behind the front door and hid behind two iron cubes. Their gun stretched above displaying a panel below. The gun had an attached camera and automatic targeting feature. They were able to view what lay ahead of them in the panel. The Russian soldier rushed up pointing his gun. Carla's gun above her was able to auto-target the soldier. She pulled the trigger as molten plasma fused his body.

All soldiers who entered so suffered the same fate.

Team Alpha enters the main hall.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: I guess people here are still unaware of the alarm. So use stealth.

"Roger" Wang said

Project DX

There entered a side door where a guard was standing. Needless to say they shot him with the stealth pistol.

The side door led to another hallway with an array of camera on one side of it. DX checked the camera's range using the infra-red detector in his PDA. The cameras covered everything in front of it but missed the area below it. DX got an idea. He asked everyone to stick back to the wall. They agreed and stuck to the wall one after the other in the side of camera. DX then asked them to move rubbing the wall flat. They started moving flat avoiding the camera and reached the other end of the room. Carla locked the door. The Russian PM, Volkanov was having a black coffee jar in his hands. He was about to pour it into the cup when he saw DX pointing the gun at him.

Suddenly a masked girl out of nowhere kicked the gun off DX's hands. She easily twisted the bodies of 5 other team members and threw them aside. DX tried to use his martial arts against the masked girl but it proved useless as she was able to counter everything. She had the hour-glass logo to her dress indicating she was a terrorist.

She continued chasing and twisting DX with her unique martial art. They fell down over the ledge and fell onto a glass platform. The glass broke as they fell to the ground. A piece of glass was pierced in her hands. DX thought of taking advantage of this. He tried to attack her with Jay-cu [citation needed: find some art like this]. Surprisingly, she was able to counter it and twisted DX again and flung him to a corner. DX took to heels as she chased him

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Wow DXâ never saw a martial art like thisâ what is this called?

"Let me come over there and then I shall ask her to demonstrate that on youâ hope you will find out what it is" DX said panting and running

He went to a corner and said

Invisible On

He ran around for some more time. The masked girl must have lost him. He decided to relax there for a while. The mission was however a failure. DX thought he should have become invisible once up. But who knew someone would attack him all of a sudden.

Angel removed the mask and looked around in desperation. She missed him.

"Tormod" she said taking her mobile "I think I lost himâ Jesusâ he can become invisible"

The SEER suddenly came few yards away from him around the corner. DX cursed himself to have fled towards the backyard. He could have ran along the side corners.

Suddenly *Low bio feulâ Exhausting in 3â 2â 1â*

Invisible Offâ Camera Eyes Off

The SEER looked very hostile. It's camera detected him

Hostility Detectedâ !..

And it shot a laser beam at DX. DX was quick enough to manipulate the path of the laser and dived sideways. The laser stuck a cylinder in the corner and it blazed off. DX ran for his life and almost fell over Angel. A

Project DX

whirl of shock swept across him when he discovered that it was Angel who was ripping him apart with her strange martial art. She never looked like it though. The SEER shot another laser as Angel pushed DX off and self maneuvered herself into a yoga position. The laser missed her.

They started racing away from the advancing SEER. Angel started jumping up and down a series of cardboards on the way to confuse the SEER's AI. DX started jumping sideways. It tried shooting but in vain. Both were acrobatic enough to escape the laser.

"Move across the corner" Angel shrieked jumping upon a cardboard which was then stuck with a laser beam
"Alice is waiting"

DX nodded and dodged to the corner. Angel jumped across and they both fled together. DX looked back. The SEER was far away from them. Alice's copter was waiting ahead

"Tormod indicates it is gonna shoot a missile as we are at a considerable distance from it" Angel said "Any bright ideas Mr. 5 times intelligent"

DX felt this to be a move of kindness. Angel could have simply not warned him and move on to one side. In either case, the SEER is chasing him and not her.

"We kick each other" DX said running

"S-Sorry?" she asked puffing

"We kick and push each other" DX screamed. The SEER let out a missile.

DX and Angel quickly caught each other and kicked each other on the stomach. They fell on two opposite corners as the missile went straight towards Alice's copter. She took it off quick enough to just escape the missile. DX and Angel continued running dodging lasers. DX climbed up a glass building. SEER let out a missile. DX let go. The building virtually broke. He was able to hold on to a window and climbed into it. Angel instead went to a dead end. The SEER was about to turn. Angel sweated on her soft skin. She hid behind a garbage can hoping something great might happen in the last moment

"Tormsâ !" she said holding her talkie "I am doomed"

"Stop the talkie" he said "It might detect communication"

Angel looked above, closed her eyes and switched off her talkie. DX peeped from above the building. The SEER was driving close to the garbage can. He took his pistol and shot at it. The defensive shield effectively stopped the bullet but it sure did distract the SEER from the garbage can and it focused on the building. DX was looking through the window. It shot a laser which DX dodged. It raced towards the edge of the building. What happened next simply left DX's mouth wide open.

The SEER physically changed its structure. It was a sort of fluid transformation. DX thought SEER's entire components may be nano tech based to ensure such rapid changes to physical structure. The fluid started moving up by the use of anti-matter molecules surrounding it. Anti-matter reverses gravity effect on matter.

DX started running in the building for his dear life. The fluid landed on DX's floor and reformed itself to form back the SEER. It looked a bit different now. It bent on several ledges of the broken building. DX performed several acrobatic steps to move on from one floor to another. The SEER found it impossible to move through little holes in the broken building DX was moving it. It thus had to fluidize itself and pass through it.

Project DX

Occasionally it shot lasers which DX's quick reflex system easily dodged them.

The SEER, now completely stuck in the middle of a derelict building had no idea as to how to come out of it. DX proudly climbed out of the building. He ran on the other side of the garbage can and touched a frightened Angel. She screamed.

"We need to get out of hereâ SEER might come down" he screamed

"Alice" Angel said in her talkie "Come down here"

The copter landed as DX and Angel boarded it. It took off the violent street of Volgograd. The SEER unable to figure a way out launched a huge missile within the building. The whole structure broke off. But the SEER remained intact. It then fluidized and converted itself into itself.

Hostility escapedâ The SEER failed it said

The copter now moved steadily out of Volgograd.

"Aliceâ can you please take me to Frankfurt?" Angel asked exhausted

She nodded

"Thanks Angelâ for the missile thing" DX said looking at her kindly

"I don't know how much I should hug you for saving my life" she said with a wide smile as she hugged him.

"What 's up at Frankfurt?" he asked her.

"Some missionâ again" she said

"You look exhaustedâ I might wanna take rest" he said

She smiled and nodded

"Soâ what are you gonna do?" she asked him.

"Get scoldedâ what elseâ a dog is gonna bark at meâ I wish one day I would put that guy in front of the SEER naked" DX said thinking of Vidimus

Angel and Alice laughed

"I informed Vidimus that you are alive by the way" Alice said

"What did he say?" DX asked

"Nothingâ he was disappointed about the loss of mission" Alice remarked

Angel sighed

"What happened?" he asked looking at her

Project DX

"You know what happened" she said looking at him sternly "They don't even care about your lifeâ€¦ all they bother about is your mission"

This point stuck DX hard. He didn't even think about it. Angel formed a special part of his life now however cruel terrorist organization she belongs to. It was because she treated him closer to heart than anyone else. So far he thought it was because of getting him into their side. But today after they saved each other's life, he felt a special bond existed between them.

Angel got down at Frankfurt. She kissed DX's cheeks and asked him to take care. He blushed. She bade bye to Alice and left into the darkness. The copter took off the streets of Frankfurt towards Styx Headquarters.

Chapter 17: Aftermath II â The Game of Trust

Styx- US Head Quarters

5:00 AM

DX looked at the watch on the corner of his retina. It displayed time to be 5:00 AM local time. He had his bio cell recharged due to his body heat in an hour. The copter landed gently just nearby Styx river near the backyard of the defense order HQ.

"This is to avoid unnecessary people ask unnecessary questions" she said with a smile

"Thanks" DX said

"By the way, I bought a koala bear toy for you" she said searching her bag "Ohâ !. I forgot it at XWorld"

"Hey... you know that place?" DX asked suddenly remembering the hazy place Angel took him.

"Never mindâ !" Alice said as he started taking off. She obviously wanted to avoid the question. XWorld seemed to be an operational place for the global terrorists. DX felt the need for the defense order to conduct a peaceful raid there to identify Menna.

INTERCOM: Angel: DXâ ! as a friend, I need a promise. Please do not tell anything about XWorld to the defense order.

DX immediately decided not to tell anything about the defense order. Not after he saw athletic abilities of Angel. She alone could handle a 100 defense order soldiers

INTERCOM: Synergy: DXâ ! it makes me extremely disappointed to know the failure of this mission. This is not why we spent so much on you

"Fuck off" DX said confident that Synergy couldn't hear. He rather wanted to say that in front of him.

DX entered his office. Macy gave a pleasant smile in his seat.

"What are you doing here?" he asked demandingly

"Onâ !nothingâ ! just checking out your PC" she said leaving her hands off the keyboard. DX came near her.

DX realized as he came closer to his seat that, Macy was not in her secretary dress. She rather wore a mini-skirt.

She got off the seat sensually. There were a few strawberries on the table. DX suspiciously sat down worrying whether she hacked into his accounts. The screen showed two women making love.

Sapphic-Erotica.com was the title of the web page.

"W-What is this?" DX said turning towards her.

Project DX

She took out a chocolate and put it in her mouth and started chewing it. She then sat on top of DX touching his pelvis with hers and her legs spread across his seat. She gently touched his lips with hers and slowly opened it and let out chocolate flow into his mouth. DX felt an erection as he received the chocolate from her mouth and started chewing it. She slowly slid her naughty hands below DX's navel and unzipped his pants. DX unbuttoned her tops and let off her melons free. She had no bra.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: DXâ Alice reported that you arrived. Please meet me urgently at the refreshment room!

"Ohâ!" DX said spilling the chocolate over Macy's bosom.

She got up and started cleaning her bosom with her kerchief.

"I-I'm sorryâ I gotta leave" DX said getting up.

"The fire has started just now honey" she said lolling her tongue "Don't you want to get nasty?"

"Vidimus called me" DX said cleaning his chocolate laden lips and started towards the door.

"Hey" she called back

"What?" DX said looking at her passionately.

She looked curiously below his navel. DX looked down and realized he did not zip his pants. He zipped it

"Thanks" he said and left the room. That was completely unexpected.

Vidimus was sitting quite and sipping chocolate milkshake in the refreshment room.

He looked quite calm contrary to how he used to look in the previous mission that also failed. DX sat near him.

"I know" DX said before he even began "I failedâ but I tried my best"

"I understand" Vidimus said patting DX's shoulders "That masked girl was beyond any comprehension"

There was a pause after which Vidimus began

"It is very hard for me to imagine that you had coffee with a terrorist here" he said anticipating a reply.

DX felt offended. Angel was above all his friend. He dared not to mention a word about XWorld or Alice as per the promise.

Project DX

"I am awaiting an answer DX" Vidimus said fixing his eyes on him

"We have already gone through this. She is my friend!" DX said loud save a scream "What do you want to know from me?"

"DX" Vidimus said asking him to calm down "All we feel is that you are not 100 percent loyal to the order. How can you make friends with an agent from our enemy territory? I just want to know if you have any problem"

DX thought for a while. Maybe he was just covering up with a word *friend*. Why did he really want friendship with Angel who belonged to his hardened enemy front? Was he emotional? A tear was about to form in his eyes. He gathered courage to answer

"I am not sure of the organization's goalsâ it seems killing of important people everywhereâ!" DX said

Vidimus was listening patiently

"It seemed to me that something important was on their side when even a person like Frizzy Max decided to join their sideâ so I wanted to develop a friendshipâ!"

"DXâ!" Vidimus began "Any so called *great person* can be lured by black money and drugsâ I forget Frizzy, he was on narcotics for the past one month"

DX gave a weak nod. This seemed fine to him and he ever decided to resist anything Angel might offer him to eat.

"I am not the one who frames policies here DX" Vidimus continued "Someone higher up does it for our own good. Name any mission and I will justify you!"

"This coalition against the Mystiquesâ I need a justification for that" DX said

"What? Don't you believe that they are terrorists?" Vidimus asked him

"They never killed even a single defense order cadet in their operations even though they are *capable* of" DX stressed reminding Vidimus's last statement where he claimed proudly that Mystique cadets were no match for Styx cadets.

"That's part of their game" Vidimus said "First they lure Styx agents but *not hurting them*. After that, they make friends using soft social elements like homely women! And after thatâ easy information access"

DX felt this to be vaguely true

"What is this XWorld thing?" DX asked

"Never heard of itâ!. X-World??? What is it?" Vidimus asked sipping caffeine

"Never mindâ I just a phrase few kids were using aroundâ I what about drug and virus statistics since the defense order's arrival?"

Frizzy took out his PDA, typed something and gave it to DX

Project DX

<http://www.united-nations.org/Styx/success>

[a graph showing cool results for Styx: citation needed]

DX gives it back to him

"Clearanceâ!" he said suddenly "I am not allowed to know certain thingsâ! especially about this Simons conspiracyâ! why?"

"In the UNâ! for that matter, in any organization, a hierarchical structure is followed. Even I don't know what people above us are doing" Vidimus said

DX was stunned

"Above us?" he retaliated "I was stressed many timesâ! forget meâ! people were stressed many timesâ! that Styx was an autonomous organizationâ! who are those above us?"

"Classified DXâ! you simply do not have clearance to know that!"

DX felt a little uneasy. Vidimus dragged his chair closer to him.

"You might feel a little uneasy about the *clearance* thing DXâ! even I felt the same, but all I can say is that you have to follow the oath. Doing stuffs against the order will harm not youâ! not meâ! not Styxâ! but the ultimate force of this planet, the common man"

There was a short pause

"Thank youâ! that relieved me" DX said getting up finally

"Contact me if you need anything" Vidimus said

DX wanted to ask Macy but fought back the instinct. He went to his office in a dazed condition. He was extremely tired of fighting the SEER. Acrobatics sure was hardwork. He lied on his couch, closed his eyes and started thinking about government, terrorism and people.

Suddenly he felt something soft fall over him and a wet sponge touch his nose. He opened his eyes to see Macy on top of him licking him. She had him trapped in a handcuff.

"Hey" DX said looking around "Someone might come in"

"I hacked the door honeyâ! it shows your status to be *home*" she said looking at him with lust.

DX lied back comfortably as Macy unzipped his pants and freed his manhood out of his boxers. She took out the pink packet from her pockets. DX could read it's title. *Trojan - Extra Time, Extra Mood* She chewed the cover open and dressed DX's manhood with it. She slid her mini-skirt up. She wasn't wearing any underwear so it was ready. It lasted for ten minutes. They rolled up on each other sweating.

K2 Villa

5:00 PM

Project DX

DX reached home. He noticed his dad working on some equations in his home library.

"Oh DX" he said looking at him "How are you?"

"I am fine" DX said "I just want to know what your role in the defense order is"

K2 looked at DX and realized it was not worth hiding any information anymore.

"It's classified DX you are not in clearance to know that" he said

"If Styx is for the benefit of people, then why so many things are kept classified?" DX asked him

K2 immediately rubbed the board clean and wrote fresh

Process in Mystique and Styx: A comparison

"The first point DX" he said "Is that they attract people to their side. They mesmerized many high quality engineering students to join them"

K2 showed DX a pamphlet

Order of Rescue - Mystique Corporate

CWP Division (Change World Projects)

Wanted Heavy Biogenetic Young Researchers - 35 break through projects

Compensation: 80,000,000 credits per month

Attractive Villa and Car + Free Dating Service

For Details contact: Krista Angelica (Evangelist - The Rescue Order): angel@einstos.xworld.com

"Imagine such a huge money per month DX in these bio genetic research labs, they develop viruses, drugs etc see, they are kind hearted outside, but very cruel inside. They speak soft outside, but they are harsh inside and they act kind outside and may even protect you from a possible danger but all this with a selfish motive. Of course, they keep on brainwashing you that your organization, your boss etc are bad and don't care about you" K2 said in a diplomatic tone.

DX looked at the pamphlet and identified Angel's name in it

"Hey einstos.xworld.com couldn't you identify their servers and trap them" DX asked

"We tried we even located their geographic location but there was just a barren land there"

DX realized the server must be 300 miles below the location. But K2 hardly could have a clue.

"At Styx" K2 continued "We are good inside DX we work for people. But what you need to understand is that we have pyramid scheme here. The people on top are a secret force who want the nation to be just and kind and a wonderful place to live with no suffering. So you only need to know that whatever and I mean whatever they say is good for the common man"

Project DX

"How can I be sure of that?" DX asks

"For instance" K2 replied sitting on his couch "If you hadn't killed Frizzy, he would have supported the terrorists apparently for narcoticsâ if you had killed Volkanov, a new Russian coup would have assured a terrorist free government with increased Styx support [Russia should waver in support of Styx (or possibly reject): back citation needed] Now isn't world becoming a better place"

DX was thinking

"For another instance, I make many decisions for the defense orderâ Vidimus personally consults me before he could take any stepâ only then he can proceed. Now what does that say?"

It clicked on DX's brain

"You are a very nice person" DX said finally getting up "So the decisions you make are good. I trust you dad and so I trust the defense order"

K2 smiled and replied

"I trust you son"

Chapter 18: The Motivation

Russia Under Coup: Volkanov's Government is Overthrown

Due to heavy opposition by the people and extremely heavy increase in Drug Abuse and Trapdeath deaths in Russia and its neighboring countries, a grand secret coup has overtaken Russia last night at around 3 A.M.

Volkanov and his political parties have been arrested by the coup led by Mr. Zeino Kosovo. Surprisingly, their aim seems to be reunion of the former nations to form back the Union of Soviet Socialistic Republic.

"My dear brothers do you remember how prosperous we were in the 70s and 80s! We were on par with America! And those days are going to come back" said Mr. Zeino, who could be the next PM.

It was also publicly disclosed that Volkanov joined hands with the global terrorists, the Mystiques and its overthrow was thus favored by the defense order

Madison Square Garden, New York City

8:00 PM

DX was never in heavy formals. The first time he is wearing this, it made him feel uncomfortable and he looked aged. Simons was leading him who himself wore a long coat. His tattoos made him a dangerous looking personality. DX personally felt that people at defense order looked more like terrorists than at the rescue order

"Where exactly are we going?" DX gathered the courage to ask

"A party!" Simons said as he dashed ahead towards the entrance. A horde of security was around them guarding them.

"I know it is a party" DX replied "What kind of a party?"

"A grand party!" Simons yelled with a smile and continued leading

DX felt it was useless to ask Simons anything. Almost half of the questions he asked him had a standard answer - *no clearance*. The rest half had meaningless answers.

They entered Madison Square garden. The auditorium was filled with several people in formals. The center stage had a huge screen.

Styx - Defense Order Anniversary

"Hey look it's DX" a whisper came in a corner.

DX turned slightly and had a look at who whispered. To his surprise, it was Micheal Bough, his favorite Brazilian scorer. His joy knew no bounds when Bough came for his autograph. *My fan is my fan!* DX thought.

As Simons led DX forward, several eminent personalities turned to have a look at him in admiration. Miss Tamira, author of popular children magic books, Mr. Edwards Canterbury, founder of nano-computing industry and world's richest man even took a signature on DX's photograph.

Project DX

"You are an innovation of modern civilization" he said. His words had a lasting effect on DX

Simons led DX to the first row and made him meet with the president of US, Mr. William Turner. DX felt astonished shaking hands with the president. For a while he felt that all these could be a dream. But he knew it wasn't. He was made to sit in second rows just behind the president.

His dad K2 came from the side and greeted the president. He then sat near DX.

"Soâ how is it DX?" he asked him

"Seems like a dream" DX said still amazed "Why are all these people present here?"

"They funded the establishment of the defense order and coordinate its functioning" K2 said

Looking around, DX saw the number of people who actually help the defense order. He felt so bad to have been narrow minded and to have doubted the defense order.

The show started in a pompous manner with flashes of nano lasers everywhere. An animated movie by Pixar was shown first. It displayed Styx vs Mystique war land where war between the two forces was fought with modern warfare. The only difference was that the defense order army fought with vigor.

"We have truthâ honesty â. And in particularâ God on our side" the animated Styx commander said. For a while DX felt he saw this character somewhere.

"That is you DX!" K2 shouted

It stuck him. He felt a little shy as the crowd applauded.

The Mystique troops were shown to be cowardly and cunning. No one was willing to lead their team and they had a self centered organization. The brave defense order cadets immediately attacked them and had them captured. Finally the defense order characters were shown to leave the war-land as flowers fell from above. Flowers also started falling from above the auditorium as an extra effect.

Blossom filled the room. The center screen displayedâ

Flowers will fall on the warlandâ peace and happiness will be restored.

The whole auditorium stood up and clapped. DX felt tears ready to come out of his eyes. It truly demonstrated how everyone can get together to solve problems of the world.

A poem was displayed in a central screen and simultaneously carol singers recited the songâ

History is Vast

But they have bad memories that for an eternity, can last

Future is extremely hazy

Worrying about it might make us go crazy

In between History and Future, is the current

Project DX

Where the infinite soul of humanity rises like a torrent!

The Soul of Humanity is STYX - The defense order

There were claps again.

The new general secretary, the oil faced Sandra entered the stage.

"Ladies and gentlemen, please welcome Ms. Nadia who wrote this poem!"

A little girl almost 8 years old stepped on top of the stage. She received a diamond medal from Ms. Sandra.
She sure is a genius DX thought

"In addition to this!" Sandra continued "She receives a life time scholarship to pursue her education funded by the United Nations Educational Foundation"

There were heavy claps as Nadia bowed to everyone. This according to DX was a perfect world, where everybody celebrates.

"Ladies and gentlemen, before we go ahead with our tonight's show, we need to congratulate someone who saved the world from becoming a DOOM" she said proudly "Someone who protected my home, the United Nations from the terrorists"

Focus of entire auditorium shifted onto DX.

"Yes! We are proud to present the Shield of UN to the bio-kid, DX!" she screamed in joy.

The flood lights now focused on DX. K2 urged him to move onto the stage. DX started walking upto the stage with pride. She gave him a shield. DX waved the shield to the crowd. The whole auditorium stood up and applauded him. K2 cleared the tears of joy that came. DX couldn't imagine a more happy moment. The applause lasted 5 minutes as he kept on waving the shield. He promptly returned to his seat. K2 shook his hands

"I am proud of you DX!" he said

"Ladies and Gentleman, please welcome, president of the United States, Mr. William Turner to reveal a secret" Sandra said as he got down.

Turner entered the stage amidst applause.

"My dear people! in my career, I held two important positions in my life! in the past as a director of CIA, and now as president of the United States!"

He started walking around the stage

"In these two positions, there was one man who gave me two breakthrough ideas! The second idea he gave me was the establishment of the defense order for world peace!"

There were buzzes among people!

Project DX

"That's right" Turner said with a smile "This is just one person who actually got this idea and architected the whole defense order. And I invite him to come over to the stage"

DX thought of asking his dad who this person was. But he saw that his dad's seat was empty. He was not there. More astonishing was that his dad was walking towards the stage. There were applause. DX couldn't help clapping very hard. It's hard to believe that the architect of the defense order was his own dad!

"Thank you" K2 said "I thank world for accepting two of my greatest ideas: DX and Styx"

There were applause again

"I now invite Mr. Timothy Guldvog, my neighbor to the stage. He has a message for the world" K2 said. Timothy, a person in 50s entered the stage. He looked very depressed. The crowd could easily realize that something emotional was going to be addressed.

He took the microphone and looked at the audience

"I hate my son! I hate my son" he shouted. Tears were easily seen in his eyes

"My son is a terrorist. My son is a terrorist!" he shouted

"If I ever see him I will shoot him yes I will" he shouted even harder. But now his body was shaking because of heavy emotions

"But before that" he said in a soft tone "I will ask him where the bullet would strike him soft and painless". He was now in complete tears. K2 held him firmly. The whole stage stood up in respect for him. He was escorted back.

"I now invite the director of Styx - United States and Universal Strategist, Mr. Patrick Vidimus"

Vidimus entered the stage slowly. DX liked this feature of Vidimus. Though he was king of nagging, he took decisions calmly". K2 returned to seat near Mr. William Turner. They started talking on some strategies.

Patrick spoke of Styx's achievement of getting down Trapdeath rates down by as much as 20 percent within one year of operation. [date citation needed]

He then spoke about the 1000 prisoners of the rescue order they captured who are being held at a secret place. DX felt very proud. He felt a strong urge to get all nations adhere to the defense order.

There were heavy applause. Patrick then spoke about over 5000 Drug and Sex rackets. In the background, seizure of drug shops was shown. There were claps everywhere. Vidimus left the stage with honor.

"Finally" K2 continued "The whole world has united to solve each other's problems and get a better future for mankind. With this, I announce one more major move in the history of the defense order"

K2 went to the center stage. A small glass pillar rose near him. It had a button. He pressed the button. Immediately the screen started flashing colors and graphics. After a while, 3D text started appearing and vanishing

Styx's next big mission

Project DX

3â 1.2â 1. 1â 1

The Cure for HIV2 Virusâ 1!

5000 Scientists from diverse universities and organizations have been recruited to work on the cure

The time to act is Now!

The Soul of Humanity - Styx

This was unbelievable news. The whole stadium was filled with roars. DX's palms were numb and red because of heavy clapping. K2 had a wide smile

"That's right" he said jerking violently "We announce to you the development of the cure for Trapdeath"

DX suddenly found someone pulling him away from the stage. He looked above and identified the tattoos to be of Simons

"We need to go away DX" he said seriously as he continued taking him. DX followed him to avoid people from thinking that he was actually being dragged.

"B-But the show is not over!" DX demanded

"You do not have clearance to watch the other programs" he said seriously "Now shut up and follow me"

DX was enraged. They reached outside the auditorium.

"I am a special agent" DX commanded with anger "What could make these celebs who have no idea about Styx intelligence have more clearance than me?"

Simons fixed his snake-like gaze at DX.

"It's the clearance that makes them celebrities" he said calmly "Now please get into the copter and go home"

The copter rose silently off New York City. DX had no mood to go home. He thought of going back to office and do some hacking into Mystique portals.

"Take me to Kentuckyâ 1 Styx HQ" DX told the pilot. The pilot was not Alice and this eased DX. She kept on pestering him with questions every time he was with her.

There were several portals online that claimed they were the official terrorists. But DX knew all these were crap. The copter landed near the HQ. DX went towards the front gate. The guard saluted him. He saw the poster at the notice board at the gate.

[change citation needed]Free Clinic, 10 Subway Street, Kentucky.

DX wanted to check out the clinic.

"Do you have a free car here?" he asked the guard. He gave him keys to a Mercedes. The car's auto driver drove him to 10 Subway Street.

Project DX

He knew his nano coated body and custom blood was immune to any known human disease. He bravely ventured inside the clinic. What he saw inside was virtual hell. Bodies lay astray on the floor. Most of them were dead. Few nurses were attending really sick looking patients. They wore protection clothes and mask.

Those infected with Trapdeath were kept inside small cages. They were roaring and screaming with red eyes on looking at DX.

"I will kill you bastardâ come hereâ let me swallow your throat" a Trapdeath infected boy in one of the cages shouted

In another room, DX was able to see few parents who were looking sadly at a girl who was tied up. DX guessed it was their daughter. She looked angry and was vibrating. But she was tied up so badly that she couldn't move a muscle.

A nurse came in and injected something to that girl. She almost instantaneously fell dead as her parents fell atop her and started crying. That must have been lethal injection!

DX in a rage stopped the nurse who was coming out

"May I help you" she asked in a very childish tone

"You just killed a young girl" he accused

"If I didn't" she said with a smile "She would have died of extreme mental breakdownâ and moreover, we are running out of cagesâ so we need more free cages"

DX let her go.

"By the wayâ do you need a cage too?" she asked

DX took out his gun. She screamed and ran away. He continued inside the hospital. Every corner showed up sick and wretched teenagers who were obviously severely addicted to the drug Menna.

A nurse was taking details of a patient in a corner. DX listened to their talks.

"Since when did you get this Trapdeath?" she asked him

"I don't know you stupid" he screamed "Am I the doc?"

"For god damn's sake, give him some cure" DX retaliated.

"There is no cure" she said calmly "Death is inevitable"

DX felt little relieved that at least now cure development has started thanks to Styx. He left the hospital with a very disturbing memory. On the way, an old lady caught his legs.

He bent down with pity. She was lying in rags.

"Sonâ !" she said "Do you have 10 creditsâ I feel very hungry. I am suffering from Trapdeath"

Project DX

DX felt a sense of pain rush his mind. He had a mother but seeing this old lady call him *son* gave him an essence of another mother. He took out 50,000 credits and gave it to her.

"You will recover soon mother" he said sympathetically "How did you get infected with this horrible disease?"

"The global terroristsâ I am a street candy vendor for school childrenâ one dayâ I w-when I was selling candies in a subway, a-a group of terrorists having an hour glass logo attacked me. They were monstrous. They kicked me till I bled and when I was about to pass outâ they injected me the virus" she said in tears

DX was in a fit of rage

"The defense order will bring back peace" he said pouring courage into her

"The defense order is of no useâ all they ever did was to give us this rotten clinic where the nurse takes bribesâ its just not free"

DX felt extremely broken down at the condition of people. He walked down the street with his head down. He looked back into his lifeâ life of Mercedes, life of power, life of moneyâ but he felt it was not necessary for him. What he really needed was to help the suffering people. Since the advent of Trapdeath, the city's people became wretched and more people became poor.

On the way, in a corner, DX heard voices of girl cry. He went into the corner. It was semi dark and nothing was visible. He suddenly saw certain Mystique troops slapping a young 8 year old girl. She was howling in pain. One of them took a syringe and pierced it into her hands. DX instantaneously took out his gun and fired at each of them. The plasma bullet at 20000 degree Celsius virtually turned the bodies of the rescue order cadets to black soot. DX went and hugged the crying girl. It was too late. The syringe contents were empty as the girl's blood greedily swallowed to viral contaminant.

DX reached his office at 10 AM. and he bashed into Vidimus's office.

"There is a proper format to enter my officeâ you have to contact my secretaryâ!"

"Damn your whore secretaryâ!" DX yelled ignoring Macy who was cleaning the paintings "People are dying on the streetsâ what are the defense order cadets doing?"

"Let us talk coolly on besides the river bank shall we?" Vidimus invited

They talked about the problem for an hour.

"Soâ!" Vidimus asked "What would be your future plans?"

"I feel so sorry to have doubted defense order" DX said sadly "I want to go for it and destroy the Mystiques completely"

"Hmmmâ!" Vidimus thought "To destroy such unemotional peopleâ you have to be unemotional yourselves"

"I am ready" DX said without a pause

Project DX

"Not so fast DX" Vidimus said with a typical smile "Think of the word *unemotional* again. You must be ready to kill anyone for this purposeâ even women!"

DX nodded. He observed that Vidimus had an expecting look. DX shuddered

"Yes DX" he said "Your third missionâ is to assassinate Mystique head data interpreter and Chief Evangelistâ Krista Angelicaâ we do not even have her photoâ but you know her personallyâ you would be the right person to assassinate her"

DX thinks... Angel is his friend

"Trapdeath is killing millions DX" Vidimus stressed

DX remembered the hospital, the old woman on the street, the assaulted young girlâ

"I accept it" he said at last. He calls Angel using his PDA.

Call Start: Unknown Gateway

DX: Hello Angel

Angel: Oh hi! I was just into my bathtub

DX: Listenâ I need to meet youâ alone at Proving Grounds

Angel: Is that urgent? I just had a heavy day today

DX: I want to meet youâ it's been very long

Angel: Ohâ that is so sweetâ. See you there in an hour!

DX: Bye

Angel: Bye!

Call End

"Roger" DX said to Vidimus "I will assassinate her tonight"

Vidimus smiles and starts leaving

"By the way" DX called him back "Alice is a spy for the rescue order"

Chapter 19: The Centurion

"Ohâ ª why couldn't you have told this earlier?" Vidimus remarked "She needs to be questioned"

He called his secretary and asked to send Alice for an interrogation. Alice came walking towards Styx river bank in rage. She was wearing a sweatshirt.

"Ahâ ª here comes the queenâ ª the queen spy!" Vidimus scowled

"DXâ ª you cheaterâ ª !" she said in humility "You promised not to reveal this to anybody"

He hung his head in shame.

"You are under arrest" Vidimus said

She looked down.

"All right" she said raising her head up "But before thatâ ª take this" she said putting her hands inside her pocket

"Shoot her! Shoot her!" Vidimus shouted trying to run. DX was too shocked to respond. Vidimus immediately took out his pistol and shot a dazed Alice in her heart. She instantaneously dropped dead as the toy koala bear in her hands slipped down to DX's feet.

"Ohâ ª !" Vidimus came with a smile "I thought it was a gunâ ª anyway she deserved to die"

DX felt extremely ashamed of what happened. He took the toy and put it in his pocket. He was speechless. A copter landed near them.

"DX!" Vidimus shouted to get his attention "Listenâ ª don't just kill Angel blindly. First get some secrets revealed. After that kill herâ ª. Keep your camera eyes off if that is the protocol"

"Ohâ ª ª yeah" DX said in a haze.

"Now go! Board the copter" he urges DX. He boarded the copter as it took off the Styx River.

The Proving Grounds, Los Angeles

2:00 AM

Angel was in a pink pyjamas. She looked fresh. She gave a pleasant smile. DX got down looking disturbed.

"Where is Alice?" she asked looking back at the copter

"She is dead" DX said "Vidimus shot her"

Angel's bright face suddenly eroded as she started crying. She became stiff and started slapping DX

"Hey stop" DX shouted holding her hands "Vidimus thought that she tried to shoot us"

Project DX

"It's a lie" Angel said instantaneously "She would never hurt a fly"

"Yeah" DX said hanging his head down "She was about to take a bear toyâ€¦ which Vidimus thought was a gun"

"Alice made that toy out of her own handsâ€¦ for a period of two weeks just for you" Angel said still in tears. DX took out the toy and he couldn't prevent his tears. He lost a wonderful friend

"You are a barbarian DX" she screamed "You let killed an unarmed revolutionary, Frizzyâ€¦ and now, you let Vidimus kill an unarmed woman, Alice"

"Will you shut upâ€¦!" DX screamed "You are the killersâ€¦ I saw your cadets injecting virus and drugs on small kidsâ€¦. And old citizensâ€¦. You have defaced the whole society like parasitesâ€¦ you are terrorists"

There was a brief pause. Angel then calls the pilot to come down. He got down. She takes out 10000 credit notes and puts them on ground. She then gives him a syringe filled with water.

"Inject this on the bum near the petrol bunk wearing this coatâ€¦ and then I will give you this moneyâ€¦." she offers

He immediately wore the coat. It was Mystique uniform, took the syringe and raced towards the bum. He kicked the bum unconscious and injected water. He then came back triumphantly. Angel gave him 10000 credits and took back the coat.

"Seeâ€¦ anyone can be bribed to act bad" she said "We are good people DX"

"I feel so confused" DX said "Alice was such a good friendâ€¦ you are such a nice friend"

Angel catches his hands and rubs it.

"If you come with me" she offers "I can show you the truthâ€¦ I can ward off your confusion. Let us go to XWorld againâ€¦ but this time withâ€¦!"

"Politics" DX ended her sentence

Few copters were in sight. Angel immediately caught DX and they enter the elevator. She operates on the hologram computer as the elevator shaft started moving down. He thought they might end up in the shopping complex. But the elevator opened in a subway.

"The path of the elevator is dynamic" Angel said looking at DX's puzzled expression

"Wow" he said. The station was well crowded. Not one minded him. Seemingly they did not know about him.

They get into a subway train. The whole XWorld is a subway though DX thought

"Where exactly are we going?" DX asked her

"To meet your best friend" she said "Tormod Guldvog aka Torms"

Few tears fell from Angel's eyes. DX cleared with his fingers.

Project DX

"I am sorry about Alice" DX said "I feel as sad as you are"

Angel nods

Seeing DX's calmness, she started

"XWorld is a world of its own. We have a different world here which has long back beaten your world on science and technology"

"It looks like a dream here" DX quoted "How could you build something so great 300 miles underground?"

Angel opened her purse and took out small box. She opened it. A bright crystal shone out of it. It was so bright that it lit the entire semi dark cabin of the train. DX had to close his eyes to avoid its illustrious glare. She closed the box and kept in inside.

"Wow!" DX said in utter amazement "What was that?"

"A centurion" she said "Non-radioactive, self disintegrating metalâ it continuously is in the process of converting its mass into energyâ on its own!"

DX had his jaws opened. He did remember making a research paper on crystal dynamics and conversion into energy in Learning Center

"Don't dear Earthlings know about this metal?" DX asked her

"Nope" she said "It's a well kept secretâ we have millions of such crystals to supply us unlimited energy"

The train stopped. Angel leads DX through a small street. They enter a small room down the street. Tormod was on his bed operating his laptop. On seeing DX, he threw his laptop aside and hugged him. DX also hugged him tight.

"I feel this strange" DX remarked "You are the head of XWorldâ I imagined heavy security and clearances to reach you!"

"Welcome to XWorldâ quite different from your normal world huh" Tormod said with a laugh

"Muller!" DX screamed finding their doggie. The dog identified him and cuddled up to him. Love is omnipresent

Three more guys enter in. DX identified them to be his school friends Krishna Chaitanya aka KC, Rene and Rahul . They lift him up.

"Welcome to XWorld dear buddy" Tormod said "Welcome to the world of no fear and all science"

"You are too heavy" KC said "They must have stuffed a million transistors in you"

DX laughed for the first time in several hours. As he got down, Tormod hugged him again.

"I missed you the most" he said "Ever since childhood, we did so many things together"

DX turned back to Angel. She was smiling

Project DX

"Thank you" he said with a smile.

Tormod takes DX to another room.

"This apartment is our head quarters" he said

"It looks like a disheveled bachelor home" DX quoted

"That's right!" Tormod replied "Imagine feeling home like when you are working!"

"This is Mr. Stevenson, Head of Military Operations" Angel introduced. Stevenson was bald man in his 50s. He eagerly shook hands with him

"May I know who this is?" he asked kindly

"I-I am DX" he said

"And this is Robin Theodore, humanitarian head"

Robin was a teenager who looked like a bamboo stick. He smiled and shook DX's hands

"What's that position?" DX asked

"He manages XWorld humanitarian society, a society that preaches goodness" Angel said

"Wait a second" DX said enthusiastically "Is XWorld a religion?"

"Yes!" Robin said "We are a new religion called humanity"

"Science and Religion must go together DX" Angel remarked "A fact your normal world forgot long back"

DX felt a chill rising in his heart.

"We believe in the existence of One God, who created heavens and earth" Angel continued "Idol worship is banned in XWorld"

Angel, Tormod and DX sat in the dining room.

"So" DX asked Tormod "Mystique. Drugs. Viruses. What's this all about and where does XWorld fit into this picture?"

Tormod smiled

"Mystique is an integral part of XWorld. We're trying hard to prevent viruses, drugs and reduce poverty" he said

DX was stunned. Tormod's eyes were telling the truth.

Chapter 20: The Media, People and Government

"If you can come with the seminar hall, I can show you some wonders on how people are carefully and secretly deceived by democracy" Tormod assured

"Sure" DX said. Truth mattered to him this time more than anything. They entered the seminar room just opposite to Tormod's apartment. It was a small room that can seat only 10 people maximum. It was empty. They occupied the front row. Tormod went until the board cum screen and began.

"Mediaâ that's how the defense order lies to the peopleâ using media"

"The defense order has no separate media division" DX interrupted

"Ohâ the pyramid controls all the media!" Tormod replied instantaneously

"Who is pyramid?... I was told many times that I must be loyal to the pyramidâ !" DX said bewildered

"Oh don't say you weren't told anything about the pyramid" Angel said gazing at him

"Noâ not a wordâ all they say is that I have no clearance to know about the pyramid" DX said relaxing in his chair

"He must be in the bottom most level of the pyramid" Tormod said. Angel nodded

"I am not clear" DX said looking at Angel

Tormod took out a device and he started drawing a 3 Dimensional pyramid in air.

"How could you draw on air?" DX asked

"Ohâ this deviceâ !" Tormod replied showing the device on air "is a nano projector. It automatically generates 3D nano grid within 1 meter cube of air. I can draw on this grid which is basically exciting the atoms on the grid"

Tormod then continued to draw lines across each face of the pyramid.

"Can't you comprehend it" Tormod asked looking at DX "It is an organizational structure"

"I get it" DX replied "Fewer organizations are on top of the pyramid where as many organizations are in the bottom"

"Correct" Tormod said "Imagine if you were facing away from the pyramid standing at some level of itâ . You can only see the part of pyramid below you and besides you. But you cannot see the part of the pyramid above you"

"So what does that exactly indicate?" DX asked

"It means, an organization at a particular level of the pyramid can see and control the organizations below it and besides it but it cannot control the organizations above it" Tormod said

Project DX

"I get it" DX said "So you are trying to say that Styx is in some level of the pyramid and some organization above it is controlling it right?"

"As much as I can say, Styx is at the bottom but one level up in the pyramidâ several forces and organizations control its functioning"

"Who is at the bottom most level of the pyramid?" DX asked

"Obvious answer" Angel said "We the people"

DX was stunned

"The pyramid is a mark of autocracy thenâ. But this is democracyâ!" he said with attention "people are supposed to rule the nation"

"People wanted democracyâ!. So the Illuminati made people believe there actually is democracy while secretly establishing an autocracy"

"You mean the owners of Illumine Corporation" DX stammered

"Don't tell me that they did not tell you about Illuminati!" Angel responded

"Only you told me through that USB Drive" DX said shrugging

Tormod now sat near DX. This clearly indicated to DX that something important was coming his way.

"The Illuminati - 13 of the world's richest familiesâ!. They have their network of business in every possible field. They are corporate dons" Tormod said

"You mean, their leader is Edwards Canterbury, NanoSoft CEO and world's richest man?" DX asked enthusiastically. He remembered Edwards taking an autograph of him during the party

"No" Angel said instantaneously

"Forbesâ!" DX began but Angel interrupted

"Forbes tell you that Edwards is world's richest man for the last 10 yearsâ! but the Illuminati is 100 times more richer than him. In fact, Edwards himself falls on some level of the pyramid" she replied

DX now understood why celebrities at Auditorium had more clearance than him. They simply fell on some higher level of the pyramid and had the right to know other things. What were those other things which were being hidden from him?

"Here is the list of Illuminati Families" Tormod said showing a projection on screen using his pen.

Majestic 12 - Illuminati's 13 Families

Reynolds Family

Du Pont Family

Rothschild Family

Rockefeller Family

McDonald's Family

Kissinger's Family

Morgan's Family

Schroder's Family

Disney's Family

"Where do the Illuminati fall on the pyramid?" DX asked

"The very top" Tormod replied

DX was in a vital disbelief. 13 families were actually ruling this planet.

"This cannot beâ!" DX said

Tormod switched over some images on his PDA which then projected on to the screen.

"What about the new Israeli parliamentary building?" Tormod said. A building showed up with a pyramid on top of it.

"Here is a picture of the International Court of Justice" Tormod said switching to next picture.

A picture of front view of international court of justice showed up. It had a pyramid in front of it.

"The illuminati controls major world organizationsâ here are the list of organizations" Tormod said projecting a slide

New World Order - Illuminati's Organizations

International Court of Justice

International Monetary Fund

United Nations Organization and its subsidiaries, NATO, STYX etc

United States of America

World Bank Corporation

European Union

"It's hard to believe all this" DX said stammering.

"Oh yeah?" Tormod said moving closer to him "Then what about this one dollar US bill"

Project DX

He projected back side of US dollar 1 bill on the screen

It started becoming very clear to him. He took out the recent one credit note from his packet. It showed the symbol of pyramid on the back too with the words

Novos Ordo Seclorum"

"Latin for New World Order" Angel said

"Is the United Nations is an Illuminati corporation? Hard to believe it" DX said

"The United Nations building itself was constructed in New York on land donated by the Rockefellers, a prominent Illuminati family" Tormod replied

"Oh yeah! " DX remembered this fact he studied in history at LearningCenter. [citation please]. It was a land worth 8.5 million dollar donated by John D. Rockefeller Jr.

DX took a moment to pause. He had a cup of water and then returned back to his place.

"Dear God!" DX realized "Truth is pain! The virus??? Who made the virus?? HIV2 virus"

"We believe, it was created at Area 51 bio-research facility on the order of the Illuminati"

DX remembered Area 51. It was a secret military installment near Nevada belonging to the US government.

"I thought it was US Military based installment! wait!. Is the US President in the pyramid too?" DX asked.

"Yes! almost in middle of the pyramid I guess" Tormod replied "He belongs to a special organization called Skulls and Bones"

"Skulls and Bones! Is it similar to Nazi's SS Deathshead?" DX asked

"Yeah! they have the same base, symbol of devil" Angel replied "S&B is a secret society formed at Yale University. Almost 52 of the last 53 presidents come from this society! the list include Mr. Bill Clinton, Mr. JFK, Mr. George Bush and of course, Mr. William Turner, the current president"

"Who controls the president?" DX asked

"A better question would be *Who controls S&B!*?" Tormod replied "Any organization above S&B can control it according to our definition! but primarily they are controlled by CFR / RIIA, Council of Foreign Relations / Royal Institute of International Affairs, a British society"

DX was shocked. America was working on British interests.

"How did the Mystiques come into the big picture?" DX asked

"Because of me" Tormod replied "I eavesdropped a CFR member talking on phone using a secret intercom! about their atrocities. I already knew Angel to be my classmate! I always felt something strange about her, an aura I guess. When I told her this one day in canteen, she asked to take an afternoon off to come with her to this secret place called XWorld! and I never returned that afternoon and dedicated myself to XWorld"

Project DX

"Tormod is an amazing guy" Angel said. DX noticed him blushing "His extremely novel management skills and high IQ made him leader of XWorld. We then started Mystique, World Rescue order as a front end organization behind which XWorld can hide secretly"

"Then what did you do?" DX asked pressing more.

"We adopted a unique uniform with Hour-Glass logo" Tormod replied "basically because it resembles Holy Grail, a symbol of Christhood who saved mankind once. We spread in subways and other isolated areas where the Illuminati Mind Controlled slaves, usually in civil dress actually inject Menna and HIV2 virus on passer-bys. We identify these parasites and make them unconscious before they could do more harm"

"Why don't you kill them! The bastards" DX said gritting

"DX" they are mind controlled slaves" they do not know what they do" Angel replied "It has been our policy not to kill anybody even though they are our enemy. We get them down here to XWorld, and treat them by telling them the truth! Like we are doing to you know!"

"You won't believe" Tormod said "Almost all of them felt extremely sad at what they did in hypnotic trance. They now hate the Illuminati and have joined hands with the rescue order"

"But the Illuminati weren't quiet all these times" Angel said dramatically "Just when the public were slowly gaining trust on us, they used their most powerful weapon, a weapon that can easily control almost 95 percent of people all over the world"

"What is it? What can control people?" DX asked

"I told you in the beginning, the Media" almost all major newspapers and TV Channels are in control of the Pyramid" Tormod replied

"They made a copy of our uniform" showed to people in well recorded videos as though we are injecting HIV2. It was all made up shooting" Angel said in anger

"Look at the quality of video" it's so beautiful" and they say it is from Subway surveillance cameras" so let me ask a question. Will any criminal taunt a girl in front of a police surveillance camera so clearly visible?" Tormod argued

DX was at loss of words for Tormod's argument. The truth was getting clearer to him by the moment.

"All major Television network, CNN, Fox Networks etc are coordinated by the Illuminati" Tormod said

"How exactly are people controlled by media?" DX asked

"Remember Goebbels? Nazi propagandist" he said, Repeating a lie hundred times makes it the truth" Angel said looking sharply at DX

"So they show the video of people being injected by the virus in subways continuously in the so called 24x7 news channels with a header - Mystique , Global Terrorists attack innocent people!" Tormod said "Obviously people will believe what the media says" because they trust them"

DX felt this to be true. The media can successfully show the good people to be terrorists.

Project DX

"All rightâ Let us forget US for a while" DX said rubbing his forehead "What about other nations?"

"Every democratic nation has been controlled by the CIA, another Illuminati organizationâ. Even third world nations are not an exception to this! For instance, Swaroop India Party leader, Mr. Ankit Khandelwal was seen frequently with some the illuminati families" Tormod said as he operated on his pen projector.

Few photos whizzed past which showed Khandelwal with Rockefellers.

"And that is why under the order of Illuminati" Angel said moving forward "The United States under their order wanted a democratic planetâ So they eliminated Saddam Hussein, Gaddafi who led the only autocratic nations at that time and bought democracy to them"

"Democracy is nothing but a tool used by corporate heads to control the whole population" Tormod said sternly

"There are all hard truth's DXâ people don't represent anything" Tormod said pressing his voice hard "Remember, George Bush once said *No matter whom people vote for, they vote for me*"

"How could George Bush, a war lover be elected for the second time? I see ballot box conspiracies here" Angel said with a wink

"What about Soviet Union coup led by Zeino?" DX asked suddenly "Doesn't that bring communism?"

Again Tormod was instant to answer.

"Communismâ Democracyâ whatever you call it, Fascism it is to the Illuminati. Anything can be hidden from the peopleâ we have records that prove Zeino to be in the pyramid" Tormod said "He belongs to the Round Table groups, just below the S&B in the pyramid to assure USSR cannot dominate or equal the US"

DX liked this. Tormod's answers cleared many ambiguities in his mind. DX contrasted this to what happened in the defense order. People there hardly replied his queries in more than few wordsâ most of which were *no clearance*. The cheaters.

"The illuminati hires celebrities and businessmen from various levels of the pyramidsâ these bastards willingly join because all they ever want is money, lust and power" Angel said bushing her soft hair "In return, they help the Illuminati in doing horrid projects like the Styx Project - An organization to centralize the military of all nations into hands of Illuminati"

"So nowâ is everyone under the Illuminati? Is everyone vulnerable to their horrific devilish plans?" DX asked a little nervous. He felt things had gone too far.

Both Tormod and Angel had a smile

"The only organization the Pyramid has never heard ofâ !" Tormod replied "is XWorld"

Chapter 21: Heaven

"Is what you said completely true?" DX asked Tormod

"Truth is a journey into itself DX." Tormod said getting up "Truth evolves over time. Many things I said are subject to change!"

DX was pondering and fidgeting.

"I think you want to ask something" Angel responded looking at him

"It's a silly doubt actually. Why would they want to spread this virus? They already rule the planet through IllumineNet" DX queried

"No! They don't" Tormod said "Look at the world's chaos and huge population and that in turn means rapid consumption of resources"

"So the idea is" Angel continued "When majority of poor and down trodden people and middle class families die, they are the only ones left for all the resources"

"And then" Tormod took it from her "They will replace the working class with advanced robots that need no salary, no pension, no rest, and of course no union"

"Are the Illuminati immune to the virus? Have they already developed a cure?" DX asked

Tormod had a giggle

"Of course" he said "They are the virus creators, of course they have the cure, But they are never going to release it to the public. NEVER. They want those at the bottom of pyramid to die and robots like you to take that spot! Robots always listen to their masters"

"I do not always listen to my masters" DX said "I always feel something they do is definitely wrong"

"I personally believe" Angel said "That you are God sent. He poured a human soul into you though you are a robot. When I walk or talk with you, honestly DX, I feel like I am walking with another human!"

But DX couldn't help but contrast other robot's life to his. He was paid handsomely and was given a sense of home. Such things can obviously entice emotions in a robot too. Somehow he felt inclined to Styx for that.

Later that day, DX was in Angel's hall. Day or night never really mattered at XWorld. There was no sunlight whatsoever. She was busy doing statistical calculations on the overtly stuffed couch. She was jotting something on papers on the table. Something very crucial was running into his mind. The copter must be waiting for him. Vidimus must be waiting for him. But now, he clearly understood that they were just liars who cheated people for the sake of power and money.

But a corner of DX took him to a different world. A world where gorgeous women like Macy made out with him. A world where people were made to believe that he was a savior. A place where he lived a king's life. That place was Styx to him. If he joined the XWorld sooner or later, the whole world would accept him to be most wanted terrorist. Already several sections of people hated him for being DX, perhaps a race that is waiting to take over humans. He was going mad by the second. He felt a need for a big stress release. Angel

Project DX

was churning her lips looking at the complex data she had to digest. Her lips were luscious and her eyes were beaming green. DX slowly and smoothly slipped his hands below his navel.

Angel looked at DX and her eyes widened seeing what he was holding straight. It was pointing straight at her.

"W-Why do you need that pistol?" Angel asked gazing at DX's eyes.

"My mission Angel" DX stammered "Is to kill you now!"

For a while Angel did not know what to do. Maybe she might beg him to save her life. But DX seemed heartless to her. Maybe she could perform her martial art. But DX was on the opposite couch a little moment by her and DX would run a bullet inside her. Tears just rolled from her eyes.

"W-Why would you want to kill me?" she responded in disgust "Don't you believe in the truth and proofs you saw now?"

"Angel!" DX replied holding the gun even more tight "No matter what, in the defense order there is a feeling of heaven! imagine being applauded by a thousand famous people. Imagine being publicized in major TV channels! imagine being considered a savior by all"

"And for that!" Angel shouted "You wan't to forget the truth! and let millions! and even billions die because of the pyramid? Huh?"

DX let out a heavy breath. His mind was thinking but he just could not let go of the gun.

"Even if you are hero now DX!" Angel continued "Once they gain control over people through you, they will simply hire an assassin to kill you and take total control! they don't give a damn about you!"

DX was still thinking. He was thinking of drawing his gun back. Because even if he did kill her, he could not get back alive out of XWorld. He cursed himself as to why he did not bring a stealth pistol which made little noise when shot. He was unable to remove the gun.

Angel was almost crying incessantly now.

"OK! I understand DX! you are influenced by power! by lust! while we are doomed to die! in any case Trapdeath will kill us here one day! kill me then"

DX was about to press the trigger. Angel's trembling hand slowly signaled to stop it. She was sweating.

"Hold on a second!" she said "After you kill me, escape from the lift in bathroom. And later email Tormod to take my rose plant from my bedroom"

DX felt a unique tinge in his heart.

"Y-You want me to escape?" DX asked unsure of her ambitions.

"Be sure they will kill you! because they love me so much! We are a family here"

DX nodded. He pointed the pistol up and was about to press the trigger. Angel shut her eyes. He sweated for a while and got up still pointing the gun at her. He went to the bathroom looking front at her and back at the door continuously. He opened the door. On the hanger there was a collection of brassiere. He opened the door

Project DX

completely. On the corner, he saw a lift. DX was mesmerized. How difficult it is to love ones own enemy? But Angel was able to do that.

He turned back and suddenly saw Angel in front of him. She looked at his blue eyes sharply with her green eyes. She could have attacked him, but she did not.

"Y-You could have attacked meâ" DX said in a puzzling tone

"I am sure you won't kill meâ because I believe that you have a soulâ!" she said with a smile

DX dropped the gun down and hugged her. He was crying wetting Angel's shoulders. She slowly took him to the sofa, made him sit besides her and cleared his tears with her soft fingers.

"You truly are an Angel" he said

Angel blushed.

"Come with me" Angel called him as she walked across the hall. She took him to her bedroom. A huge rose plant was on the center of the room.

"These roses" she said "understand my feelingsâ when I feel happy, these flowers are blooming bright. When I feel sad, these flowers droop"

The flowers were bright and glowing red like a young Caucasian girl.

"Just few moments agoâ!" she said "These must be drooping down when you were about to kill me"

DX felt this was just her psychological feeling. There logically seemed to be no way for a rose plant to understand feelings of a girl.

"Soâ!" Angel was staring at him expectantly. DX was puzzled wondering what she was expecting. He turned his eyes towards the comfy bed waiting with two pillows.

"Not thatâ!" she said looking embarrassed "I was expecting you to ask the silly question"

"What silly question?" DX asked "About relationship between a stupid rose plant and a girl?"

"9 out of 10 new recruits here ask how plants survive underground with no sunlight" she said sighing

"Don't be stupidâ the whole world knows that any light that contains atleast 6 colors excluding green can cause photosynthesisâ!" he said leaving the bed room.

"Hey wait" Angel said coming behind him "Let's go for a walkâ you can learn more about XWorld then!"

"How could you get so much electricity?" DX said spreading his hands to face freedom in streets of XWorld"

"Actually, 65 percent of our electricity is from sun" she said proudly

"No kidding. You would need an exorbitantly large solar cell on the surface of the planet for thatâ and I did not hear of anything like that" DX said

Project DX

"Only if it is in the surface" she replied instantaneously "It is in deep space near planet Venus, as close to sun as possible. That energy is transmitted using wave guides into special nano-spy receptors on Earth's orbit and from thereâ. They again use nano-wave guides to reach our station"

"Hey can't they detect your spy-reactors and wave guides?" DX asked amused

"Not unless someone goes to every cubic meter of airâ I told they were nano-spy receptorsâ plus the control center in these devices use custom protocolsâ so no one can break through" she assured

Space Solar Cell DX thought in amazement. He had actually designed such a system back in LearningCenter, but XWorld has finished its implementation

They entered an Indian restaurant. A beautiful girl in a blue sari came to their table. On her chest, an ID card hung with bold lettersâ

Amulya R

"I would like to have chicken pieces filled inside a turkey's stomachâ with lots of spices and chilly" he said

"XWorld is filled with scientists. In fact Amulya is part timer here. Hard to find a butcher" Angel said

"Then get a butcher from *normal* world then" DX replied stressing the word *normal*.

They had a laugh

"Get us two pepperoni pizzas" Angel gave the order.

"You guys must have become insane" DX said while waiting for the order "No sunlight for an entire lifetime"

"Actually, we like it that wayâ cool and damp" she said

DX noticed many XWorld residents were quite fair. *Melanin Absence* he thought.

The pizza tasted far better than any other pizza on earth. They ordered coffee. DX tasted perhaps the best coffee in his life.

"Incredible!" he screamed "it tastes so much better than Earth's coffee"

"100 percent pure milk from dairy cows" she said confidently "Your normal world packed milk must have been adulterated and must have been at least 4 days old"

A cheerful girl in her mid twenties dived head along into Angel and started tickling her navel. DX also wanted to get involved and tickle her but resisted it.

Angel managed to acrobat her friend into peace.

"DXâ This is Disgaea" Angel said still laughing from the tickle "The gift girl. Disgaeaâ this is DX"

"Disgia... Dis...." DX was trying to get her name right

"Dis-gai-ya" Angel helped out

Project DX

DX smiled and said *hi*. He felt extremely attracted to her. Disgaea was staring at him with a smile. She searched her bag and took out a magnet and handed it to DX.

She then started at Angel as though she was reading something, searched her bag and gave her a kerchief. Angel swiped her sweat with it.

"Why did she give me a magnet?" DX asked

"I don't know" Angel replied "She can read your thoughts by looking at your expressions then she gives you the appropriate gift so we call her *the gift girl*"

DX knew she had interpreted his mind correctly. He was attracted to her and she gave him a magnet. *Get Attracted* he said to himself

"How can she do this?" DX asked.

"It's a technique her dad taught her. He was a professional face-reader in the CIA. Unfortunately he was killed by CIA during one of their operations to protect confidentiality, leaving Disgaea doubtful about the government in particular and life in general. She inherited fortune he earned at stock market. She became kind of mad." Angel said paying the bill

They threw the recyclable cups into the recycle bin and continued walking.

"She was quite mad and illiterate, but she had the notion of lifting downtrodden spirits with her words and wonderful gifts. Our intelligence told about this girl who was in a mental asylum till last year. We got her to XWorld. Even since, she has been our constant guiding friend"

"That was heart moving" DX said. Disgaea's madness looked like a cure the world needed. Someone who can rejuvenate somebody's mind was required of the time.

"You know what" Angel said as they walked through the colorful corridors of the compact street "We have recently been extracting Earth's excess surface temperature for energy"

"No wonder" DX said realizing "Global Warming net effect came down to 0.2 percent last year"

Stevenson, Head of Military operations arrived. He looked too soft to be a Military operations head. May be that explains *soul saver*

"Hello Lassie" he said to Angel. A beautiful Indian woman was besides him "Hello Laddie"

"Meet Anjali" he introduced her noticing DX's glued eyes pointing to her.

"Oh is she she is" he said lifting her hands and kissing it. He didn't seem to move his eyes sideways.

"Er... she is my wife" Stevenson said. DX immediately returned to his senses.

They continued their walking. A cool breeze always swept softly. DX guessed there must be provisions of an air conditioned fan on top to provide this comfort.

DX told this to her, and Angel hit her forehead with her palms and said something that vaguely sounded as *what a geek!*

Project DX

A funny looking tattooed guy whizzed towards them. He had his hair like that of a porcupine only colored with extremely matchless colors of orange and green. He wore a sleeveless with baggies and his over slim body was covered with tattoos of electronic circuits. One look at the transmitter in his hands confirmed DX that he was a crazy geek. He was more irritated when he started to speak

"Whazzzup babezzzzâ !.. Whoooz thiz corporate guy wid yah?" he said screaming and shaking his hands violently. DX swore he didn't understand a word of hizzz.

"DX himselfâ ! a new recruit on our team" she said

"Ohhhhâ !wowwwwww mannnn" he screamed as he zoomed forward and hugged DX "But aaai willll never forgive ya for killin Frizzzz mannnâ !."

"See ya bot laterzâ ! I've gatta work naaw" and he removed skaters outa his baggie pocks and whizzed awayyyy. DX felt relieved that he left.

"Isn't any body in XWorld *normal*?" he asked. That earned a typical Angel's frown.

"Heyâ !" Angel said suddenly "Tormod is calling usâ ! we need to go"

"How did you know?" DX asked bemused

"Just like yours, my eyesâ ! in fact every XWorld cadet's eyes have an augmented PC"

"And how do you inputâ !?" DX asked

"By thought!" she said "Neural heuristics are understood by our OS"

DX wanted this badly. He felt using palms and index finger extremely slow and trouble some. It ended up with people around thinking if he was trying to have foreplay with himself.

"Wowwwwâ !." DX said "You guys are so much advanced compared to our world"

"Actuallyâ ! normal world is already developed. But much of technology is held closed inside corporate research labs and accessible only to elite fewâ ! that's rule of the pyramidâ ! the people on top get everythingâ ! if you even knew what technology the Illuminati bloodlines have been usingâ ! I bet you would pee here" she said in a challenging tone.

"No useâ ! I have no clearance to know that" he said sarcastically. Angel giggled.

"Here at XWorldâ !" she continued "Everything we do is open in our communityâ ! the technologyâ ! the ideaâ ! etc. If you buy a product, you are given every ownership of it including it's implementation and reselling for second handâ ! this persists for software and robotic products also"

DX was stuck with awe. He could figure of how normal Earth was slowly getting divided into categories of the pyramid while XWorld stood united into a single category. No wonder, they have surpassed the intellect of the World.

"But don't you think the World has now become a secure place compared to past" DX suddenly argued "I meanâ ! no world war for the last 70 years [citation needed]"

Project DX

"Don't think just in terms of war" she said "Speak in terms of what they are doing to your life"

She continued

"Look at the kind of movies they show. Racial, violent, sexually immoral. Look at the kind of music, violent, disgusting lyrics. Name one rap song without the word *motherf***ker*. Look at the kind of sports they show you, barbwire electric cage blood dripping street fight, uhhh"

"By showing these kind of things" Angel continued "They spoil creativity and reasoning ability in majority of population, again using the powerful weapon, the media!"

DX's mind went into deep thought. He felt this to be completely true. Especially when a teenager instead of practicing sacred geometry at home or visiting his religious place of worship on Sunday, brawls the Saturday night with heavy extreme music, drugs, alcohol, "temporary" girl friends, of course it all happened since media popularized this as "pop" culture.

"I contacted Tormod and asked him if we can come a little late, in the meantime, we can visit the Soul-Orchestra"

"How did you contact him? You were with me all the time" DX said

"I just thought of asking him, my neural sensors were tapped by my OS and it converted my thoughts to words. I just thought of sending him. My OS asked for confirmation. I just thought *yes*. It was sent!"

DX almost fainted. They just implemented telepathy with technology! They entered a huge auditorium. DX was expecting this to be a bull fight or something. But XWorld didn't seem to be a place for such things. The auditorium was built to emulate Roman architecture of the Colosseum but with acoustic technology. A band of 3 girls and 2 men sitting were sitting on the oval stage. One girl in the middle had a flute. The girl next to her had a violin. The third girl had a microphone. One man played the piano while the other had a guitar.

The orchestra started and the next half an hour was a ride into heaven for DX. The band played heavenly music and the auditorium was reverberating with perfect symphony. DX's soul felt like dancing harmonically at the beautiful music. While coming out of the hall, DX said,

"Thank you Angel, for this place seems to be if not anything, heaven"

She grinned a cute one

Project DX

"Sirâ DX addressed him. There was laughter. DX couldn't understand.

"Nobody here calls anybody *sir*. We just refer to names" Stevenson said

Realizing they were extremely informal, DX took the next empty seat without waiting for somebody's permission. Angel had one foot on the table. Tormod was chewing gum. He spit it strategically. The gum fell inside the bin.

"Actually" Tormod began "Modern military systems in normal world teach you to respect seniors just for loyalty and control. This is how they keep you under control"

DX nods.

"Let's begin" Tormod said taking out a note "Can you throw some light on Grand Cathedral DX?"

"Grand Cathedral?" DX asked

"Haven't heard of it?" Tormod questioned back

"Nope"

"The pyramid is much stronger than I thought in terms of its secrets" Tormod said bending backwards "Never mind"

"Pass the Bluetooth" he asked Stevenson.

He opened a slide in his PDA and inserted the Bluetooth. Immediately, the projector connected to it and displayed a slide.

TOP SECRET: (Q-Blowfish Decrypted Text)

Grand Cathedral = World Domination

Machine Through People Control

"It's a machine to control people?" DX asked

"Yeahâ" Tormod replied "This was message sent to a top layer in pyramid by some idiot who exposed his IP Address. We had to fight a month to get this encrypted messageâ and another month to decrypt the quantum encrypted messageâ and all we get is thisâ but any information is quite useful!"

"It also has an imageâ" Tormod said "That of a snake facing sun. I forgot to bring it"

"I do know a walking cathedralâ" DX interrupted remembering the cathedral he and Vidimus visited during his first visit to the defense order. That's where he met its bishop, Simons

"A walking what?" Angel murmured to Stevenson

"Errâ actually it is a stable cathedral in Styx, but since we walked towards itâ you know" DX said realizing he was blabbering

Project DX

"Jesusâ!" Angel whispered sighing

"Hold onâ!" Tormod interrupted "Is there a cathedral in Styx office?"

"Yeahâ! and Simons is a part-time bishop there"

"Exactlyâ!the same idiot"

"He is also the director of CIAâ! Synergy Simons"

"Is this world domination related to Christian movement?" Angel queried

"Looks more like Antichrist movement to meâ!" Tormod said "Never mindâ! I think it is beyond that. It speaks of a machine to control all the people"

DX fantasized that it might be him. Maybe after all the pyramid was planning to make him control the people. But his dream was beaten back when Angel repliedâ!

"Definitely not DXâ!" she said stylishly shaking her legs leisurely "He looks human to me"

The idea was completely sealed off by Tormod's reply

"Of course not" he said sternly "But DX can find it for us"

"Find what?" DX asked unsure

"The Grand Cathedral of course" Tormod said

"I guess I am far below the pyramid to know thatâ!" DX said in a negative tone

"Dad's love DX..." Tormod said "He can help you find it out"

A lightning struck DX's head.

"Where is my dad in the pyramid? He never told me" DX panicked.

"Professor K2â!Ahâ! I forgot to tell you" Tormod replied with an edged tone "He is the head of Council of Foreign Relations, CFR"

DX was speechless. His dad was the head of CFR that completely controlled the US Parliament in addition to being the Head Strategist of Styx Global Operations

"You go on as spy for XWorldâ! and keep on reporting to us DX" Angel said smiling

"I heard that your team hacked into DX's transmission subsystem" Tormod asked Angel

"Yeah" she said showing Thumbs up

"You are my baby" Tormod said with a flying kiss to her.

Project DX

DX felt relieved when he reached the surface of Proving Grounds. The morning sun poured life into him. He couldn't imagine how XWorld cadets were able to stay underground without sunlight.

The elevator disappeared and a slab covered the floor. DX switched his camera eyes back on. He waited there for an Intercom. And sure enough it came.

INTERCOM: Pyramid: Did you kill her?

DX had no idea who it was.

"Yes sir" he said "Who is this?"

INTERCOM: Pyramid: Out of your clearance to know that

"Fuck your clearance" DX thought

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Ahâ ! there you are DX. Congrats on killing Angel. The Pyramid told me. Did you get vital information?

"Yeahâ !" DX lied. He decided to cook a cock and bull story about what information he got from her.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Good! I am sending the copter.

DX played online chess game with Deep Blue premium access. Deep Blue, world's strongest chess program was converted by IBM into multithreaded program for people to play online.

DX defeated it the 10th time. He acted as if he was an ordinary guy named Sid. Deep Blue went mad as no one defeated it so far. So IBM immediately erased the database about the matches all the 9 times to preserve their pride that their machine tops chess. They even offered Sid 10 million credits for not coming online again. DX didn't care about this offer and continued to defeat it.

"Ready to move sir" a male voice came

DX looked up to see a stealth copter and a pilot just few yards besides him. He hated this stealth technology. It has become too much noiseless and stealthy that one cannot identify a copter that just landed beside him.

"Yeah"

The copter took off the silent Proving Grounds. DX missed Alice. He felt extremely sad about what happened.

INTERCOM: Pyramid: DX! Come to Pyramid Prison Egypt

INTERCOM: Vidimus: DX! Come to Styx - US Headquarters for discussions

DX knew what he had to do. His loyalty went to the pyramid first.

"Take me to pyramid prison. Somewhere in Egypt it seems" he told the pilot

"Sure sir" he said "I know that location"

Project DX

DX felt this might be the chance for him to talk with prisoners and get to know more truths. He had no idea why he was being called to Pyramid Prison.

INTERCOM: Vidimus: Cool DX. That was actually test for your loyalty.

"I hate being surveyed" DX said blankly

INTERCOM: Vidimus: I assure you this would be the last time

The hot Egyptian climate though wasn't felt inside air-conditioned copter, he could imagine seeing it outside. The copter landed amidst never seen before pyramids. They were much smaller than Ancient pyramids and were polished with marble.

Synergy Simons was waiting down in Hawaii T-shirt. He looked extremely funny

"Welcome to Pyramid Prison" he said shaking DX's hands

"I never remember seeing these in any history book" DX said looking around

"You never will too" Simons remarked "These were constructed recently by the defense order for the rescue order terrorists"

"By the way" DX said to the tyrant "More good news, I assassinated XWorld Evangelist Angel"

INTERCOM: Angel: You seem to be very happy spreading this news around jackass.

Simon's hugged him happily.

"This is one great leap for Styx" he said

"Did you kill Tormod?" he asked in a devilish tone

DX wanted to shout that Tormod was his friend but then controlled himself

"No he had heavy security. 10 Retinal scanners at different levels surrounded his work office" DX said. He contrasted this with Tormod's actual office which was just another apartment around the street corner. DX missed the jovial street environment of XWorld.

"Where is his hideout?" Synergy asked

"300 miles below Proving Grounds" he said confident the Simons would become mad

"We will dig through it and kill them all" he said with a barbaric smile

DX felt sad at how he was unable to look at devilish side of these people all these days. They seem extremely happy to hear the words *kill, assassinate, destroy etc.*

Simons took his mobile and ordered his men to start digging Proving Grounds.

INTERCOM: Tormod: Synergy turns out to be complete nut. "Normal" world technology has never dug more than 8 miles.

Project DX

DX couldn't resist laughing. Simons was actually planning to dig 300 miles underground which will take millenniums to complete. At the same time, he was awestruck about the secret metal Centurion which actually dug miles underground.

"I need to know about the cathedral" DX suddenly asked Simons

INTERCOM: Angel: You blew it! Don't tell them that we already know something about Grand Cathedral! they will become more careful then

"How do you know about the Cathedral?" Simon's asked in bewilderment.

"That's where we first met?" DX said successfully changing the topic

"Oh! " Simons said with a relief "What about that?"

"Remember, you made me take oath to the pyramid then [back citation needed]. Who is this pyramid?"

"Well! "

"Don't say I don't have clearance" DX warned

"You do have clearance to know about them" Simons replied "The pyramid, the aura, the all-seeing eye of Horus are different names we refer to the same entity. People who want to make this world a better and safer place with a secret hand"

INTERCOM: Angel: By spreading drugs! viruses! what a way!

"They act in secret and need no fame" Simons concluded

"Who are they?" DX asked

Simons gave a nasty smile

"No security clearance" DX himself answered. Simons nodded

"Why am I here?" DX asked looking around. There were armed soldiers of the defense order.

"I don't know" Simons said "Lots of armed forces are here at the moment. Maybe they wanted you to monitor them on some big project"

INTERCOM: Angel: Something fishy. I don't think you are supposed to be here.

DX saw several trolleys being dragged with some canisters on top of them in several different directions. All canisters had the same logo.

GC *Garbage Collector* - Showing a sun and snake

DX felt it was a bit too much to create a logo for Garbage Collection! GC. Suddenly DX realized what Tormod said about Grand Cathedral. He told about a snake facing the sun. Also, GC can stand for Grand Cathedral too. DX decided to follow the strange canisters.

INTERCOM: Tormod: DX! That is the symbol of Grand Cathedral. Chase it.

Project DX

"Synergyâ I guess I would like to roam around for a while" he told him

"Sureâ I But don't enter any of these pyramids"

"Affirmative"

DX slowly followed the canisters. After a while, everybody seemed to converge together into an entrance of one of the pyramid. He slowly entered the pyramid without rising doubts.

"Camera Off" he said.

INTERCOM: Angel: Hey turn your camera eyes on!

DX knew it was useless to reply. When his camera eyes were off, audio was not transmitted so she couldn't hear it anyway.

Inside he saw a horde of Egyptian workers doing recycling of garbage. He decided to leave when he suddenly saw officials in black coats appear from a corner. They went towards the canisters to inspect it. DX went to the corner secretly. There was a lift. He got into it. The elevator had a keypad that asked for password. DX decided to hack it when suddenly the officials came towards him.

"I am not sure if you are supposed to be here" one of the officials said in a synthetic tone. His voice must be augmented. He was 6 foot 5 inches tall dwarfing DX with black cooling glass.

"I am on some official work from the Pyramid" he said looking away.

The authorities got in and punched the code in keypad. The elevator started going down. After few floors, it stopped. DX got down with the authorities and took detour into a corner while they went straight. He started recording the events in front of him so that he could send it to Tormod for processing.

Quadra core servers, Huge Datacenters and workaholic scientists working in front of their computer terminals. Many of them stood in front of bio-genetic protein sequencing devices. It didn't take that long for DX to realize that he was in the middle of a research facility. It was a grandiose project organization. There was a huge monitor on top that actually gave graphical progress of modules from each cubicle. If one area showed less progress, scientists from more progressed areas went to the less progressed areas rapidly.

DX decided to go to a cubicle and ask about the project. He looked up. He was able to see that the authorities were looking at him and plotting against him. He realized that very soon they would come down to get him. He had less time to investigate. He entered a cubicle with an isolated scientist who was working on genetic algorithms in paper seriously.

"Excuse meâ !" DX was about to interfere.

"Do not disturb" he said blankly and turned towards his computer screen.

"Marco" he said video conferencing online with his friend "Are you able to sequence the neural genesâ I they show lot of randomness in sequencing"

"Try to deactivate the genes in dendrites. Alex's cortex has many of them still alive"

"Is Alex still alive?"

Project DX

"No. The official stabbed him to death. Now we can experiment on his cortex and medulla. His brain is well stored in my freezer. Take a look"

The scientist ignored DX completely and left to see his friend. DX received the shock of his life. The monitor showed photo of a young boy around 8 years old, stabbed on multiple locations. He stayed numb at what atrocities they were doing.

The synthetic voice came again.

"You are not authorized here DX"

DX turned back to see the authority in black coat again. There was another guy besides him.

"It is advised you leave immediately" he said.

DX walked out of the pyramid as he turned his camera eyes on and transmitted the video to Tormod and Angel using the OS built in his brain.

After a whileâ

INTERCOM: Tormod: DX! What nasty bastards. They killed young kids to understand human gene evolution. I get it. Grand Cathedral is about manipulating human genes in nervous system. Are they trying to get us insane?

DX suddenly observed the unfriendly nature of soldiers around. They were looking at him strangely and murmuring something. They started moving towards him pointing their gun. Simons came in front of him.

"What happened Synergy?" he asked

About a thousand soldiers cornered him pointing their guns at him.

"It seems you switched over to the Rescue Order, the Mystiques" he said with a serpentine smile

"Impossible!" DX acted with an exclaiming look

"The pyramid confirmed it" he said shrugging "I got to follow the pyramid"

INTERCOM: Tormod: Seems like a spy did all thisâ. Surrender DX

"I surrender" DX said unconditionally.

Chapter 23: The Great Escape

DX was sitting next to his dad in a familiar location apparently feeling dejected. His dad K2 looked very troubled.

"Why did you switch over sides DX?" he asked a pressing question

"I had no option" DX replied "They had truth and justice in their side"

"But look at what you are missing DXâ we actually thought of making you a superior raceâ a race that descended from DX just like the Aaryan race, far superior in thought and physique to any other being" K2 said

"I know dadâ !" said DX sighing "But my heart doesn't seem to accept this"

"Such a heart is a donkey's heart DX. Be a Lion, does a Lion ever think twice before killing its preyâ no it doesn't!"

DX was thinking

"Use Darwin's theory DX" he stressed "Survival of the fittest. That's why we decided to eliminate the poor and downtrodden middle class families so that only the rich, intelligent and famous people liveâ that too led by you and your new race"

DX looked at his dad's greedy eyes. He didn't know what to say. Darwin's theory was something he didn't like to oppose. He was the fittest in this theory

"Take your own time to think" K2 said "In the meantime, it is time for you to start multiplying your race"

"Sorry?" DX asked unsure of what he heard. K2 gave a smile and took DX to a room. There was a comfortable bed with three naked gorgeous women from China. K2 locked the door from outside. Next moment, DX found himself in bed naked with the three girls and a huge erection.

One girl got on top of him and started riding him while the other two caressed him. After few minutes, DX realized orgasmic inevitability. He was about to release his vital seeds into the Chinese girl's womb. He came with an explosion.

DX woke up from his wet dream. He looked around twice or thrice and assured it was a dream only. The last thing he remembered was when he surrendered Simons injected something that rapidly made him unconscious. The OS in his body was still active, but he was unable to communicate with it. They might have disabled to communication links he thought.

It was completely dark. A shutter door opened suddenly revealing his little prison. The lights inside switched on as Dr. Fermann came in. DX hung his head in shame. He had to face another nagging session from Fermann. There was a surveillance camera up monitoring the prison.

"DXâ you need to get out of here" he said sitting near him "Tormod told me that you were arrested"

DX was astonished. He looked at Fermann in bewilderment.

Project DX

"I am a spy for the XWorld" he said realizing DX's confusion

"Wowâ!" DX said "I can't believe it"

"Yes DX" he said "I knew this day would come when you would be liberated from evil. Actually, they wanted us to make you into a robot that accepted commands. I actually programmed emotions secretly and made you judgmental"

DX felt extremely thankful to Dr. Fermann. An emotion in his view point was very important in every person's life.

"I can command Synergy to release you. I have the authority. But I will be held responsible later and may lose command. You must attempt to escape yourself.

"How?" DX said looking around "The whole area is surrounded by defense order cadets even If I manage to escape the prison"

"Not just that" Fermann said in a sympathetic tone "This particular prison is located in deep center of pyramid. Very closed in many ways. It's tough to escape dear"

"Then what to do?" DX asked

"This can be an advantage DX" Fermann said "They are over confident about you and sure that you wouldn't escape. The surveillance room was empty. So go daringly but do not get over confident yourself"

"Wellâ!" DX was thinking what to reply

"Let me help" Fermann offered "I got the floor plan of pipes. Here, they have pipelines to transport natural oasis waters. Before they built these pyramids, there was an old Sumerian pipeline hidden underground. They built the new pipeline from scratch without harming the old one"

"I got it" DX said "New pipeline has surveillance but the old pipeline does notâ!"

"Good!" Fermann said "I am transferring the schema through infrared"

Fermann got his PDA near DX's eyes and switched on infrared. DX's retina showed a message.

DX Cube Firewall: File Reception PipeSchema.pdf

Accept? Yes/No

DX said *yes*. He opened the schema and made it translucent so that he can see what is ahead of him too.

"Thanks" DX said

"I must leave now" Fermann said "Accompany me to the pipeline room and then escape"

DX went to the surveillance camera. Using his system, he was able to hack into it. He realized that the camera stored 2 hours worth of video into it. DX programmed it to transmit the past one hour's video.

"Is it necessary?" Fermann said "There was no one in surveillance room"

Project DX

"Precautions" DX said.

Fermann directs DX out by slowly hiding him from the cameras. At one edge, they came across a rapidly rotating camera. DX hid behind Fermann's huge coat. Fermann to avoid suspicion as to why he suddenly stood there, took out a cigarette and smoked.

"Invisible On" DX said

Bio Fuel Depleted

DX knew it was a crappy idea. In any case, he had clothes. As an acrobatic move, while the camera turned away, DX ran and reached the other corridor. Fermann was shocked but realizing that the camera did not notice, he gave out a smile. DX then saw an opening to pipeline in the schematic on the other end of the corridor. There was no surveillance in that row. So he frisked fast. On reaching the opening which was hidden by a cardboard, DX took leave of Fermann and got down the pipeline. Typical oasis water filled up to half of his thighs inside the pipeline.

Fermann was on his way back. The guards at the surveillance room waved to him.

"By the way sir" one of the guards said "Smoking is prohibited"

Fermann smiled and cautiously looked at their televisions. DX's cell still showed DX to be sleeping. He has an hour to escape before they realize this is replay video and raise alarm.

Surveillance cameras were scanning the area around pipes. DX moved carefully to avoid detection by any of them. He kept on moving according to the schema. He suddenly found a point in schema where the old and new pipelines meet. He decided to go there. He suddenly heard movements and immediately hid behind.

An automated military robot went straight unable to recognize him perhaps because of the dark area where DX hid. He cautiously followed the robot from behind and connected to its system. He turned the system into his favor and started receiving video data feed from it. He continued to the old pipelines.

At the entrance of the old pipeline, there were five surveillance cameras. But there were extremely reflective flood lights above the cameras hiding underwater details and water was up to his shoulders. DX dived under water and dived slowly underground. He reached the area below the 5 cameras and got up stealthily. He then entered the old pipelines. His camera started receiving signals again. He turned his camera eyes only to XWorld domain blocking access to the Pyramid.

There were carvings around the pipes and they were lit by lamps. DX was surprised how lamps could be lit forever underground. There was water flowing below.

INTERCOM: Tormod: Surprised? Actually, water, H₂O can be converted to a fuel form, HHO. These Egyptian pipelines have an inbuilt ancient mechanism using which H₂O can be converted to HHO. Hence the eternal glow of lamps.

DX was about to faint at this wonder. He felt funny how things like these are left out of the seven wonders of world. DX kept on moving

There were several drawings around the pipe. One of them depicted a reptile launching over a nude girl. There was a sun on top. DX saw the schema and moved to exit.

Project DX

INTERCOM: Einstein: Greetings DX. I am Albert Einstein, developer of theory of relativity. Please don't exit now. Get the K2 doctrine from your Dad's office. It is indicated in your schema.

"This has to be a joke" DX thought. He was worried whether the ghost of Albert Einstein got control over his systems. But even he had the interest to study the K2 doctrine whatever it was. Moreover, the INTERCOM must have come from XWorld as he allowed access only to XWorld.

"What does the doctrine contain?" he asked

INTERCOM: Einstein: It signifies the future prospects of CFR.

DX stopped. He looked through the schema again. He had to go back to the new pipeline to get to an opening close to K2's office.

INTERCOM: Angel: Choice is yours DX. But K2 doctrine could be useful as well.

DX thought for a while and then rushed back to the pipes. Suddenly he finds that he cannot dive into the water as surveillance cameras were pointing forward. He had to expose to cameras and there was no option now. DX looked into the schema once again. Mr. Burtlon's office and K2's office were on opposite lanes. He got an idea.

He exposed to the cameras and ran towards Mr. Burtlon's office. An alarm was raised as several bells started ringing. He immediately dived stealthily and went towards an area that could lead to K2's office. He heard footsteps around Burtlon's office. He commanded the reprogrammed robot underwater to shoot at sight. If Angel knew this, she would be mad. But anyway, she would never come to know of this, DX thought.

He got up the entrance of the pipe and ended up in a corporate section. He entered his dad's office which was luckily open. DX peeped inside and there was no one. He entered and searched frantically for the doctrine. He found it finally in a corner of the table. He suddenly heard familiar noise outside. It was noise of K2 and Fermann. DX immediately hid in a corner near the table. Fermann entered in, and on seeing DX, he immediately turned the lights off.

"Are you crazy?" K2 shouted getting in.

"I feel extremely paranoid of room lights. Let us use the night lights" Fermann said

K2 sat on his chair failing to see DX who camouflaged behind a vase.

"You are getting too old Fermann. Look at your phobias"

They talked for a while and Fermann managed to take K2 outside. DX immediately took the doctrine. He dashed back into the pipeline. He ordered his robot to stop firing. He went towards the opening. He saw few soldiers and immediately ducked underwater until his nose and ears were alone exposed in a corner. He closed his eyes and waited for them to move away.

One of the soldiers observed DX's head immersed in water and immediately shouted.

"Hey! DX is in Burtlon's office assaulting him! let us go now!" and took the other soldiers with him. DX got up after they left and wondered who gave them that false information. He nevertheless smiled happily and entered the old pipes and from there, started making a way to exit following the schema.

Project DX

The whole pipeline arrangement looked like a strange riddle to him which when solved seemed to open some area. DX was more interested in escaping than solving any puzzles. He kept on moving with the doctrine document in his hand scanning paintings for later reference with his eyes.

INTERCOM: Tormod: Strange. These look like classic Sumerian paintings. Most of them depict Anu and Ki. Brother and sister who mated to create Anunaki, a reptilian. It remains a mystery for centuries till date.

DX found the exit path finally. But on seeing ahead, he got the shock of his life. The exit gate was controlled by three heavily armed robots and laser beams.

INTERCOM: Tormod: The pyramid is damn cautious.

K2 felt Egypt to be very hot. He went to the shower room with a towel draping his private organs. He assured himself twice that the toilet door is closed and then removed the towel. He opened the shower shrill, water gushed violently startling him.

"Must get these guys to change from old pipeline to new pipeline" K2 thought "Darn it"

DX roamed around. He knew that solving the Sumerian puzzle might give another opening. He started looking at various paintings and symbols drawn on the edges and started moving along the pipelines forgetting the schema. Inside his mind, he was able to identify the hexa-pyramidal geometry of pipes. Mapping his way, he was able to reach the central pipeline structure which had no water.

INTERCOM: Angel: Great Job DX. It was said that it took months for people to solve Sumerian riddles. You did this in just hours.

"I see three switches here" DX said looking ahead "They can manipulate the whole pipeline"

INTERCOM: Tormod: Good

DX moved the three switches.

INTERCOM: Tormod: Greatâ I guess the whole pipeline's symmetry must have changed.

K2 applied soap all over his body. The water flow stopped from the shower.

"Darn this pipeline" K2 shouted in anger.

"Sireâ !" a voice came from outside "I've got some bad news"

"What?"

"DX was found joining the Mystiques. He is arrested"

K2 felt a tinge in his heart.

"Oh lord" he said in sadness.

DX came out and he noticed that indeed the pipeline structure changed. He began to like this puzzle more. He moved towards the exit. Finally he climbed out. A copter with hour-glass logo was waiting several yards away. DX ran fast towards it. The door opened to reveal Tormod and Angel with a laptop. They smiled at

Project DX

him. DX hugged them and got inside.

Few soldiers spotted the copter but it was too late. It took off fast and escaped Egypt.

K2 tried to rub soap off his body to meet DX and get him out.

"Sireâ!" the voice came again "I got another bad newsâ ! DX has escaped"

This is good news K2 thought. His son was safe atleast.

"Sireâ!" the voice came again "Another very bad news. Few troops are stuck inside old pipelines and are unable to find a way out"

"Well send them the pipe schematic" K2 growled from inside

"Sireâ!" he replied "The whole pipeline structure is changed. Someone rebuilt it"

K2 came out forgetting he was nude and shoutedâ !

"Are you nuts? How does the pipeline structure 'change' all of a sudden"

DX, Tormod and Angel reached the ruins in Giza.

"What are we doing here?" DX asked

"We have an elevator connecting to XWorld here" Tormod replied pressing on a pillar. An elevator came out and they entered. DX was still standing outside looking back.

"What happened?" Angel asked cheerfully

"Amazing engineering" DX said "The Sumerian pipeline"

"There is still more to this" Angel said "Ancient knowledge is powerful and sacred"

DX felt happy to have escaped the prison. In the beginning, he felt he couldn't have escaped. He handed over the doctrine to Tormod as the elevator zoomed to 300 miles underground.

Chapter 24: Albert Einstein

DX woke up after a comfortable sleep in a new apartment they gave him. The appointment letter given by Angel was still in the sofa. He was to receive a monthly income of 50000 credits and allowances. It was definitely much less compared to what the defense order gave him but he had mental peace here among friends. Last night's escape was an adventure he would never forget

He opened his PDA and logged on to USAToday.com

DX declared to be Most Wanted Terrorist by the defense order. \$3 Billion ALIVE Wanted

Click here to see Picture of DX in Jail

DX was caught joining hands with global Terrorists, the Mystique and reportedly arrived at defense order prison system to assassinate his adopted dad Professor K2.

He was caught at the nick of moment and jailed. He then escaped because of his extreme intelligence. If you find DX anywhere, do not involve in direct fight with him because he is more than capable. Just inform the local police.

Riots started everywhere around the world as people started burning effigies of DX and demanded his execution. He was immediately stripped off his citizenship and licenses offered by the defense order. Styx Director Vidimus requested cooperation of every nation for extradition of DX

Reading the news almost made DX cry. He loved his dad more than anything. By giving false news, the Pyramid effectively made people change their view on DX from a demigod to that of a devil.

This was news he would never forget.

Tormod entered in suddenly.

"DX today we will meet a person you will never forget" he said smiling.

DX went to have a shower. He guessed XWorld might have water supply from seas after removing all salts from it. When he came outside, Angel was also waiting in couch with Tormod.

"Who the hell are we gonna meet?" DX asked putting in jeans and t-shirt.

"The most intelligent person I have ever met" Angel said in a romantic tone

"Stop joking silly" he said sitting near them "me meeting myself seems strange"

:Not you" she said challengingly "I am more intelligent than you"

"Okâ !" DX said "Let us have a challenge"

"Guys" Tormod said getting up "Have it later. Now let us go to meet Mr. Einstein"

"Yeahâ !" DX said "Einstein contacted me while escaping from prison. It couldn't be. Is he still alive?"

Project DX

"A sort of" Tormod said prompting DX to lock his apartment door.

"What do you mean *a sort of*?" DX asked

"You will find outâ€" Angel said as they entered the color lit street.

They walk for a while around and reach a small subway. On the entrance, there was a guard.

"We are off to see Mr. Einstein" Tormod said. He then opened the control room where there was a retinal scanner. It scanned the eyes of Angel, Tormod and DX. He then gave them the keys to a Mercedes car. They got into the car and drove it inside the tunnel.

"Cool. You guys have car manufacturing here?" DX asked Tormod

"Not many" Tormod replied "Few branded pollution free cars only that too inside these tunnels" Then went on and reached a deserted street with lots of electronic circuits wired around a central pyramidal structure. On the entrance door, there was a huge screen that said "*Welcome to Einstein's Villa*"

Tormod appeared in front of the monitor. The camera on top recognized his presence and the monitor asked question

How many visitors?

He typed 3.

A finger print scanner showed up for them to authenticate. Tormod inserted his finger. Monitor glowed green and opened the door. He got inside. Angel inserted her finger. It again glowed green and Angel went inside.

DX put his finger in the scanner. It glowed red and an alarm was raised. DX screamed Tormod's name but they had already gone inside. A needle came out, took DX's blood sample by piercing his elbows and identified his DNA. The door opened and he went in.

Tormod was going ahead. He ran to catch up with them.

"You guys could have waited" he told them

"For the first time" Angel said "Your finger prints are scanned while you are authenticated with your DNA"

They continued walking inside a huge hallway.

"Such heavy security seems very ridiculous" DX said

"Of course it is required" Angel said "It's Einstein himself"

"B-Butâ€" he was dead long back in 1955!"

"We resurrected him" Tormod said proudly

DX was shocked. A zombie Einstein seemed too much for him.

Project DX

"Yes! He controls our projects here" Angel replied "Actually we only recovered his brain and augmented it with powerful processors and data-servers. From 1970s, he has been resurrected back to life in the form of a human brain with modern computing power"

"Oh my God!" DX said in disbelief.

A series of door opened up and simultaneously doors behind them closed. There were laser guns on top. DX could imagine varied levels of image processing their aspect and appearance at each corner was undergoing.

Finally, they reached a dead end. A voice came from speaker above.

"You have been image processed on all previous doors. Now as final step, Einstein himself will process your faces"

The room became bright with various colors. It was so bright that they had to close their eyes for an instant.

"Einstein can process Terabytes of image in seconds" Tormod said

"Wow" DX replied

The wall that seemed to be a dead end was actually a shutter based door which opened up. They entered and sat on comfy couches. A machine came rolling by and popped up a hologram of Albert Einstein.

They got up, bowed in respect to him and sat down.

"Greetings Angel, Tormod and DX" Einstein spoke in a royal tone.

They smiled

"We came to meet you directly actually to show where you reside to DX" Tormod said

"Ah! I get it" Einstein replied "How is the anti-matter missile Hidengenum going on?"

"A grand success" Tormod replied "reports of test will be emailed to you soon"

"Are you sure it will work on Area 51?" Einstein asked

"With a penetrator laser module, it will, but it is still in tests" Tormod said

"Good!" Einstein replied "Angel! do you have anything interesting to share"

"Yes sir" she replied "Statistics reported by United Nations department is false"

"Interesting! so the claim the Trapdeath decreased is!"

"Totally false" Angel said confidently "As per our statistics, it tripled"

"Then what are the Mystiques doing?" Einstein asked

"I am thinking of calling them back" Angel said

Project DX

"This is cowardice" Tormod said

"This strategy doesn't work" Angel argued "These defense order cadets just keep on increasing in their numbers"

"Soâ what do you suggest?" Einstein asked her

"A new strategy" she replied "To eliminate the cause first"

"The causeâ !.?" Einstein said "We will come to that later. DXâ asleep?"

DX shut his yawn which was becoming bigger by the moment.

"Erâ no. I am confused actually"

"Shoot"

"Are you planning to use Anti-Matter bombs?" he asked wondering. Anti-Matter bomb can destroy a whole Africa.

"In extreme emergency like when they decide to put all 10,000 famous people of the pyramid in a safe storage and kill rest of the world, we would kill these 10,000 people" Einstein replied

"Wicked" DX said "10,000 celeb deaths. I feel so strange to ask, but please tell me, how this wonderful place called XWorld get started"

"Hmmm" Einstein pondered "Good Questionâ Have you heard of Opus Dei?"

"Yeah" DX said "A secret society in Europe"

"That included Issac Newton, DaVinci etc, who basically managed secrets which if let out, would force the church to burn them alive" Einstein said

"Yeah"

"Galileo, the famous scientist started his own society that truly was most secretive and it is called XWorld today"

DX listened enthusiastically.

"At the time of Galileo" Angel continued what Einstein concluded "in 1609, the church who were mesmerized by the teachings of Aristotle refused to believe Galileo's teachings. He thus decided to form a secret society in the basement of his home with his group of interested students. They called themselves Sacred-Science or SS"

"I never heard of it" DX remarked

"I told it was a secret" Einstein scowled "A true secret. Unlike Opus Dei or Illuminati"

"Initially there were only 50 people with headquarters in every home's attic or basement. They transferred scientific documents with ciphers so that no one else could decrypt them" Angel continued "If the church found out, they would have been burned alive. Later, a particular highly intelligent group of guys discovered

Project DX

the Centurion metal, which had very rare properties"

"SS had laser back in 1900s itself" Angel said "Far ahead of your normal world which had the first working model in 1960s. Laser produced from Centurion is very powerful of the order 1055 Watts and it literally destroyed the 5 SS cadets and their labs where they first made it. We then started using it to dig underground and research on more metals"

"Then during the cold war" Tormod said "Raids started for National Security and so they started underground stations. The first station was 10 miles deep. The elevator had no security checks. So anyone could have attacked them. But they were lucky enough"

"Until one day" Einstein took over again "Farad, a bright scientist discovered water cyler. A stream of water runs on top of XWorld structure underground. It absorbs heat which is in-turn used to generate energy!"

"Wow" DX said with his mouth open.

"1970s was the breakthrough we needed" Einstein continued "We launched our spy satellite. Since our protocols were different, we by passed every other spy satellites and even extracted their own information. That's when we got to know about Illuminati, World War II conspiracy etc"

"1970, when Einstein was resurrected, it was XWorld's most critical time. His sheer processing ability enabled XWorld to enhance its security and expand globally by recruiting scientists who were sick of the war minded world. Mind you, the whole world was under cold war then" Angel said

"We needed money" Einstein said looking up "We thought of starting a corporate, but that was risky. Soon we started our own marketing system that dealt with US Dollars as currency. Now of course, we have also switched to credits"

"And 2000-2020 was even more important" Angel said "Because this is when Einstein became multithreaded and was able to manage all activities inside and outside XWorld. 15000 more vital scientists joined facing threat of being gassed"

"Gassed?"

"New concept DX" Tormod said "They make scientists work on a project that is secret. And fearing leakage, they take them to a chamber and leak cyanide into it"

"During 2020s" Tormod continued "XWorld started recruiting in small numbers and improving secret security. A new concept called XSpies were introduced. About 15000 dedicated people in various areas like business, arts etc normal people who couldn't be in pyramid were identified and told the truth. They later became spies"

"Some of the defense order cadets are our spies. They might have helped you during your escape" Einstein said.

"I don't think so" DX said "Maybe they were not in the search team"

"Having said this Angel" Einstein turned to her "Tell me about the cause thing"

"The cause" Angel said "is the virus. We attack the virus by developing a cure"

Project DX

"What do you say Tormod?" Einstein asked him.

"I was thinking of suggesting the same" [back citation: Angel and Tormod must have fought about this at Elevator].

"If Tormod says it so be it" Einstein said "I will form a team schema and start basic plan for developing the cure"

"You are sweet" Angel said trying to touch the hologram in vain "Thank you"

"How many team members do you need? And who will be the team leader?" Einstein asked

"About 500 would be enough. I wish to be the team leader" she said smiling.

"With pleasure" Einstein said "Anything else?"

"No" Angel said "I will let you know if I need anything else"

"By when will the cure be ready" Tormod asked

"I can give you the date only after the analysis week" Angel said

They bade good bye to Einstein and started moving away. DX stayed back and went to the hologram.

"Einstein!" he said "Thank you for giving the world what it needed"

"What?" he asked

"Relativity"

Einstein winked.

DX had some time to relax in BerryFruit Corner. He ordered a pineapple juice can. He opened it and started gulping big mouthfuls. DX was thinking about the cure. He wanted to be a part of developing the cure.

He wanted to ask Angel but he felt she might refuse it as this was not the job assigned to him. DX suddenly saw Disgaea, the gift girl sitting in her gift shop listening to MP3s.

He immediately purchased a florescent bag from a shop nearby. He noticed that she used an old bag to carry gifts. So he thought this gift might come in handy for her.

"Your bag looks old" he said giving her the new bag "Take this new one. Gift to the gift girl"

"Memory of my dad" she said smiling "It's his bag"

"Oh! sorry" DX said

"But hey" Disgaea replied looking at DX who was a little dejected "I can keep my old bag inside your new bag!"

"Great idea" DX said in joy and gave her the gift.

Project DX

She started reading his face. DX put up an awful expression. He felt awkward whenever she did this. She probed her bag for a gift.

"It feels a little difficult to find your gift" she said continuing her search.

After five minutesâ

"Eeeeeee" she said "Here is your gift"

It was a battery operated toy which showed a man climbing a mountain. DX said thanks and left.

Suddenly he saw Angel busy with 5 people. He stood there and after they left, he sat near her.

"Angel" he began "I want to be software services developer for project Anti-HIV2"

"From your past experiences" Angel said "I don't think you have any software engineering experience"

"I know cool programming" DX said

"Awww" Angel said "I am sorry DX. We do have pros here. I am really sorry"

"It's all right" he said. Angel left with a pinch on his cheeks.

DX sees the toy. He presses the switch below. The man goes almost to the top of mountain and slips till center. He presses the switch again, and the man reaches the top. He got the point!

He chased Angel down the street

"Ohâ" she said suddenly noticing him "DX"

"Yeahâ DX" he said "The person who created Xole, the bio-informatics tool as a fun project. Now the whole world uses it"

"Ohâ" Angel realized "I never knew this"

DX started whistling and started to leave. Angel quietly followed him.

"Errâ DX" she called

He turned back acting as though he was unsurprised.

"That is great" she said "Will you be a part of Project Anti-HIV2?"

He showed her thumbs-up and left.

Chapter 25: The Cure for HIV2 Virus

Albert Einstein through his creative mind acting as right brain handling new ideas and high processing power of data servers acting as left brain handled complex calculations and preliminary data analysis.

He organized in just terms of hours, a massive organization of scientists for the vaccine team. He chose carefully, scientists who actually innovated new ideas in fields of Virus and Anti-Virus design and development. He then gave higher design positions to those who were practically involved in HIV Anti-Virus project that succeeded in 2013

DX logged onto USAToday.com. He just wanted to confirm whether the news he saw in the morning was actually real. He couldn't imagine billions of people believing him to be a most wanted global terrorist.

The hero is always hated first he thought. But the headlines had changed with breaking news.

USAToday.com

FLASH NEWS: Styx Declares cure for Trapdeath

Styx Global Research operations division achieved a break through early today morning when the research head of HIV2 Antiviral development division, Professor K2 having announced the cure they developed to be "Tested and approved by FDA for all people"

The release of Antivirus started with practical demonstration on five people in public coverage. If you are infected with Trapdeath, contact your local defense order office. They will transfer you to major headquarters. Expert neurosurgeons will inject you the vaccination at varied locations after they give you anesthesia. Injecting the vaccine without anesthesia or expert neurosurgeons can lead to instant death.

Professor K2 donates 500 billion credits for free scale distribution of Vaccine for economically downtrodden

Future: Any form of unauthorized neurosurgery is prohibited without supervision of defense order certified doctors. This is to prevent future developments of such horrific viruses.

DX scanned the news and emailed it to Tormod and Angel. They came chasing each other to his room.

"Let us connect to Einstein" Tormod said opening his laptop.

"I thought Einstein was busyâ!" DX said munching a huge burger which Angel was greedily watching "â organizing the cure development"

"Oh don't you remember?" Tormod said turning his attention to him "Einstein is multithreaded. He can create multiple instances of himself, each one sharing memory but doing different tasks. When one instance of him is organizing the development, another instance might be controlling the elevators, while another instance is managing XWorld central funds. When you want to chat, there is always one instance waiting to be created"

DX's jaws opened wide open. Thinking of one Einstein himself made his head spin. Now he hears that thousands of Einsteins can run together and interact with each other. He became so overwhelmed that he almost ignored it when Angel snatched the burger from his hands and started devouring it.

Project DX

"Einstein is everything" Angel said munching "He is the government, he is the communication infrastructure, he is the system, he is the manager, he is the mega creative genius and everything that you can imagine him to be in XWorld. It is totally controlled by him"

DX tried to get his burger back but Angel turned over to face his opposite.

DX's eyes OS started a new session.

"Last night I personally installed ThoughtWorks into your brain" Angel said gobbling the last piece.

"ThoughtWorks? What does that mean?" DX asked

"It is the same device that does what ever you thinkâ just like mine" Angel said

"You did it when I was asleep in your couch?" DX asked

She nodded.

"Creepy" DX replied "Need to find my own apartment.

"And I do deserve at least a burger for that" she said

"Try thinking that you need to connect to Einstein with us as a group and focus on that thought" Tormod asked of them.

DX and Angel tried doing it. Immediately DX's thoughts were converted into words. These words were parsed by his OS and it was sent to Einstein Server Networks. Einstein's Programs understood the complex semantic meaning of words and generated commands to execute the requested service.

"You need not even speak anything" Angel said "Just think of something to speak and then focus on that thought"

After DX focused on his thoughts, his retina showed a chat window.

Connected to Albert Einstien Thread A4555-241D

Chat members: Angel, DX and Einstein.

Tormod: Mr. Einstein, please connect to USAToday.com and process the head news.

Tormod: I think we got to stop developing the cure and become immune first.

Angel: Me too.

DX: I think the cure should be developed by us. The cure announced comes from the pyramid.

Einstein: How can you be so sure it is from the pyramid?

DX: The heavy donation was made by my dad. From where could he have got so much money!

Project DX

Tormod: I get it. He was never that rich

Einstein: Obviously he must have been funded by the Illuminati. K2's genius spark is being utilized by them effectively

Einstein: What are your views Angel?

Angel: I have mixed views here. We need to look at their cure also. I mean a cure is a cureâ !!

Tormod: That's the issue here Angel. Why did they release a cureâ ! and that too after they released the virus. What is the purpose of the cure?

Einstein: As the question of purpose comes, moments ago, a multithread of mine got a message from Miss Estefana Colmenero. She and her group strongly recommended an investigation of Styx's own cure.

Tormod: Do you mean reverse engineering?

Einstein: Bingo! They have started their team on reverse engineering. Go ahead, develop the cure, but keep in touch with the reverse engineering team also.

Einstein Thread A4555-241D ended after successful logging.

Tormod logged off

Angel logged off.

DX thought he wanted to log off and focused on that thought. He was logged off.

Later that day, the super trio boarded subway express all the way to nano-genetic research facility to start developing the cure with team organized by Einstein.

"Heeeyyy dudz"

DX wished it wasn't waat he woz thinkin that person to be.

"Hi Kid Rock" Angel said waving her handz.

"Hellllloo my sweet team leader. Aaaaem the prograamer of thiz projeckt"

"Meet your fello prograamer. DX" she said

"Hai" DX said tryin to avoid hiz gaze.

"How're yah" he growled hugging DX

Fermann was sitting alone in his office. The door opened and a young pilot named Distelmo came in with another soldier.

"What is the matter?" Fermann asked

Project DX

"He was the one who revealed DX's switching over sides to the defense order" the soldier said.

Distelmo had his head down in shame.

"Thank you soldier" Fermann said "You may leave"

"What did they do to you for telling them the truth?" Fermann asked prompting Distelmo to sit down.

"The defense order bastardsâ they ordered this soldier to have me killed" Distelmo said "They said I knew too much"

"Why did you report about DX?"

"I-I thought he might be a threat to XWorld. He already killed Frizzyâ you know. But I no longer consider this to be true. Not after he got us the extremely secret K2 doctrine"

"Are you sure?" Fermann asked focusing his glasses on him.

"Yeah" Distelmo said

"Let us forget this episode" Fermann said "return back to XWorld"

INTERCOM: Fermann (To Tormod): Distelmo has understood DX now. He trusts in him now

Kid Rock was whacking DX's brain nuts.

"Wadz wid your accscent?" DX questioned

"He onze attended a rock concert in your "normal" world. The seating arrangement woz very poor. He woz made to sit right exactly beside the master booster for 3 hours. Blast! For ten dayz he was deaf, on the eleventh dayâ he continues to inspire generationz wid his accent" Angel said trying to imitate Kid Rock

"Yeahâ by the way Tormod" DX asked "Did you find out that spy?"

"Nope" Tormod said pausing music he was playing in his brain OS.

DX thought it wouldn't matter now. He wouldn't go back to the defense order anyway now. The subway got down at station C81.

"The different alphabets indicate a different continent" Angel said "We are now below Africa"

"How could we reach so fast?" DX asked

"These trains travel at supersonic speeds between alphabets" Angel said

They entered a research facility with glass windows. DX was amazed. Generally no research facility he saw had open offices with glass windows, a paranoid against theft of information the normal world has developed.

A woman with neatly combed hair came forward. She looked to be in her mid thirties.

"Hello" she greeted "I am Helen Sandra, maintenance chief of this facility"

Project DX

"Please show DX around" Angel said "He is here for the first time"

Angel was carrying a huge bag.

"What's in that bag?" DX asked looking at irregular protrusions arising from it.

"It's my close to heart rose plant from my bedroom" she said "I am going to stay in an apartment nearby till we finish the cure"

DX felt this strange. Carrying a huge rose plant all the way seemed too much for him. She could have given it to neighbor. Then again understanding girls is his worst subject in life.

Sandra took DX to his cubicle. There were people who have already started working. There were two wide screen monitors in front of him. The first monitor showed him a variant of Linux OS with AI-390 7th generation programming language.

The second monitor showed him a 3D view of a human.

"What you need to work on is" Sandra said dragging a seat from the empty cubicle right "GenetiBase CADNA - Computer Aided DNA. It makes it possible for you to map Proteins and DNA searching Einstein's DataCenter database for genetic information of any species"

She gave a sample search for human gene information responsible for heartbeat. She got results from the database and the entire protein sequence layout appeared graphically on the screen.

"I can now manipulate the protein layout to change the way heart beats"

She then changed parameters by writing a script in AI-390. Then she executed the script.

"I can now monitor the effect on his body in this monitor which actually is a specialized hologram based monitor"

As she activated it, the human body form gave a 3D hologram structure. She was able to zoom the body and various statistics appeared. Finally his heart appeared

Heart Beat: 129

Normal Heart Beat: 90

"Here are books of AI-390" she said sliding a rack on top open "Anything else?"

"I guess everything is fine" he said

"Good" Sandra replied getting up "Your task will be messaged by a thread of Einstein soon. Have a nice day"

"Have a nice day Sandra" DX said. He felt happy looking at hard bound books. It bought him memories of LearningCenter back.

At 9, DX along with his dog Muller enter Angel's new apartment. She was not available. DX tried searching every room of the house to be sure. How could she have possible left her apartment unlocked? He sat on the couch. This couch was more imposing to sleep that the couch in Angel's original apartment in street A43.

Project DX

They were more imposing to work.

The rose plant was in front of him. Its flowers were drooping and almost lifeless. Angel entered in drooping. She has tear drops in her eyes.

"What happened?" he asked making her sit near him.

"Mike and Chironâ" she said "They have been set backâ cut into pieces"

"How did they send it back?" DX asked

"They just put their mutilated parts into the lift that they dug upâ and sent it down" she said turning pale and sad. [citation: sync with chapter on cure discoveryâ there DX learns some other method]

Tormod got in at the same moment with a young blonde girl.

She comes forward towards Angel herself and introduced herselfâ

"I am Estefana Colmeneroâ the teamâ"

"Yeahâ you are the ones investigating Styx's version of cure"

"Yeahâ" she said "It is almost finished now"

Angel and Estefana went into the corridor.

"Let the gene leaders think" Tormod said to DX "Shall we watch cartoons?"

DX loved this. He was already very tired. Realizing his capabilities, Einstein gave him a lot of workload. But the advantage being, he got a 70,000 credit raise in his salary.

"It's almost done" Estefana told Angel while they looked at the merry street below from balcony

"Finished?" Angel asked bewildered

"Actually" she said "It's kinda blocked"

"Blocked?"

"Most part of the antiviral vaccine seems fine. But a particular series of amino acid sequence seems redundant. And such redundant series are available on all samples"

"It they really are redundant, I don't see much trouble" a male voice came. They turned back to find Tormod.

"It *is* trouble" Estefana replied stressing on "is" "It takes a lot of pain to introduce such random amino acid sequences that too in every cell of the antiviral"

"Were you able to find its purpose?" Angel asked

"No" Estefana replied looking dejected "It needs a sort of code"

Project DX

"A code?" Tormod said "Sounds like some computer stuff to me"

"A code Tormod" Estefana said "Is a trigger that can activate a particular sequence in a gene"

Simons took care enough not to let his robotic cranes dig too close to the lift at Proving Grounds

"You must be crazy" K2 shouted "Digging 300 miles underground will take not take just yearsâ it will take centuries"

"What else could we do?" Simons asked slowly looking at K2 with his snake like eyes.

K2 remained calm.

"I have another alternative" Simons said going towards two Styx cadets who were seated together "We send these two veterans down"

The veterans got ready with their favorite weapon, the flamethrower.

"Synergy" K2 said laughing "First of all you enraged them sending chops of their veterans. Now you are gonna send your men to face their wrath?"

"Why not?" Synergy asked "They have flamethrowers to burn anybody alive. They have perfect armor that can withstand their so called anesthesia bullets"

K2 didn't wish to argue. Simons wanted to get inside anyhow. He sent the two soldiers inside. They pressed the down button. [citation needed. Scene describing how they actually sent the mutilated bodies]. The lift started going down.

As soon as it reaches level 5, the hologram gets activated and lift stops. A voice is heard

This is Einstein Thread 83A6: Proving Ground Access Security. There is no positive recognition of your faces.

"I know how to deal with this" the first guard whispered

"Errrâ we are here to meet with Mr. Tormod for negotiations of peace now that cure has been established"

"You are supposed to be with an XWorld cadet and I must be informed by a core member. None of this is true in your case"the voice said

"A stupid AI" the guards said to each other "They pressed the down button again and the lift proceeded to go downwards. At 100 miles underground, the lift stopped again. The guards were getting impatient.

INTERCOM: Einstein (To Tormod): At 199 miles, some unexpected defense order intruders. Very aggressive with flamethrowers

"Kill them" Tormod said without a pause. The horrible picture of Mike and Chiron was still afresh in his mind.

"Kill whom?" Angel asked

Project DX

"I ordered him to kill some intruders from defense order" he said "Who have come here to destroy us"

The impatient guards were now hitting the doors and computers. The voice came again.

The down button is disabled. 10 minute warning is given. Go to top by 10 minutes or you will be blown away.

"Huh?? Just open the fuckin' door. We wanna burn you all alive with there" a guard said showing the flamethrowers.

They kept on threatening for 10 minutes. Then a laser gun showed up after an opening. They opened the flamethrower. They were safe because of the covering. The laser gun was still intact while everything else was destroyed. They tried in desperation to press the up button, but it was disabled.

Finally, two laser bullets were shot at their fuel tank hanging back. They were charred instantly. The lift then went up.

Simons and K2 almost frightened to the extent of fainting looking at the charred bodies.

"I suggest we drop a nuclear bomb here" Simons said

"Are you crazy?" K2 shouted "This place is just 10 miles away from Los Angeles" [citation citation]

As Estefana left for a German assignment, Angel and Tormod were strolling in balcony.

"Why did you order their killing Tormod?" she asked

Tormod made an uneasy expression.

"Didn't you see what happened to Mike and Chiron?" he said

"Killing means death. Death means separation of soul from the body. And all civilizations and religions tell you that it is nature of a demon to separate a soul from the body. We are not supposed to be demons Tormod" she said calmly "We are supposed to be Angels who forgive and give life"

Tormod thought for a while and felt bad. He could have just sent them back up alive.

"I understand" he said "I feel very sorry about this"

The Tasty Girl Midnight Bar,

Berlin

An alcoholic Germany was not something Hitler imagined for her future. But some people misuse the power of freedom offered by democracy. Freedom misuse practically gets them into claws of evils like drugs, alcohol and prostitution.

Project DX

Estefana hated it as to why Fermann had to choose a night bar for secret talks. After a while she was satisfied by the choice. No one would actually expect two high end scientists to meet in a midnight bar. And no one would actually mind any surveillance in midnight bars.

The copter landed silently at the backyard of the bar. Estefana entered the pub. She looked around and found Dr. Fermann on the last table. She sat near him.

He immediately poured wine in her glass.

"Errâ ð no" she said "We don't drink alcohol in XWorld"

Fermann laughed

"If you guys come to normal world and face the stress and fear, you would more than like to drink" he said

She smiled and then started explaining the random sequence of amino acids found in Styx's cure. Fermann listened intently forgetting the wine bottle in his front.

"Unfortunatelyâ ð" he said "I was not at all assigned to this project, though I tried a lot. But yeah, human body can understand amino acid sequence in ways difficult to understand"

"Do you mean â ð it is shuffled?"

"Not just that" he said "It can also be transposed and substituted making it all the difficult to decipher it. Actually, this whole process was detailed in a break-through paper in 2032 by Bahrain, Anuj and Finora. It was entitled *Human DNA and Amino Acid Processing*"

"Oh yesâ ð" I remember Estefana said rubbing her forehead "It was declared blasphemy and all digital copies of it was destroyed"

"Yeahâ ð except it wasn't a blasphemy. And Area 51 scientific labs at level 8 recruited these employees. They definitely would have played a role in this cure to get these random sequences"

"Who did all this?" she asked puzzled "The Illuminati?"

Fermann nodded and smiled.

"The code to decrypt it according to the above paper" Fermann said "is called the Code of Orion"

"How could we get the Code of Orion for this vaccination?" she asked him

"As such it must have been stored securely within illuminati secret facilities that are heavily guarded and secret! Getting it may be impossible"

"Then how could we get them?" she asked

"Only one way" he said "By observing the pattern on one person on whom the gene is triggered. God knows what could happen to such a person. The whole world is now curing its disease with an untrusty vaccination"

"Here" Fermann said giving her a bag from below "It contains several research documents for you and Angel to study. I cannot stay here for longâ ð that might risk my life"

Project DX

"Afraid of Styx cadets being hidden here?" she asked.

"They might be here" he said

"Let me make things easier for you then" she said getting up and sitting on his laps "I am your date". With that she kissed him rubbing her lips against his and sliding her tongue inside. Fermann tried to insert his fingers inside her minis. She strategically removed his hands, ended the kiss and walked with the documents away from the pub.

At 3:00 A.M, Estefana boarded the copter. It took off the beautiful sleeping city of Berlin towards its outers where they have XTeleport

Chapter 26: The Next Hitler

DX found himself amidst the serene streets of Moscow Parliamentary building. It was the same location he had fought with the SEER War Machine. He dreaded the location and had hoped that he would never come here again. The last thing he remembered was Tormod asking him to rescue Angel who was abducted by the SEER.

It was no use now, he had to fight the war machine and rescue Angel. He entered a remote street going pointlessly. There was no map and his EyeOS was not working. Suddenly there were three SEERs coming from the remote street. DX turned to run away to the original street. Two more SEERs emerged from the corner.

DX ran across to the open area. Several SEERs surrounded him. DX started shouting "I Surrender! I Surrender!" thinking of his dear life. The SEERs kept on circling him. DX opened his eyes and could do quick arithmetic. There were about 800 SEERs circling around him in the open street. He almost swoonedâ.

DX woke with a start on his bed. He couldn't move anywhere for minutes. Time was 6 A.M. His eyes showed a message.

XWorld 138th Strategy Meet

Presided By: Mr. Albert Einstein.

IQ Test: Tommorrow 9:00 A.M. Live in your EyeOS.

Do you want to take this exam? Yes/No.

DX thought yes and focused on that thought.

Thank you. All the best for the exam

He found himself wordless when he thought why he chose yes.

He reached his cubicle in the nano-genetic IT Services facility just next to his new apartment. Kid Rock was unfortunately DX's colleague sitting just in the next cubicle. He however started his system and started working.

He heard a crash besides him and a skater hit his head. DX looked down in pain. It was Kid Rock.

"Do you have to slide all the way to office?" DX screamed "Can't you just walk?"

"Heeeey Maaanâ relaxs" he said and started his system ignoring a staring DX. After about 15 minutes of work, the server went down. Their system displayed the message

Einstein Thread A222-3A34: Server Shutdown. 15 minute data analysis.

"Are ya ready 4 d IQ test?" Kid Rock shot

DX suddenly remembered it.

Project DX

"Oh yeah" he said "What is it for? And what is this strategy meet?"

Kid Rock gave a stupid look to DX.

"Ya dunno?" he said pausing music in his thoughts "You must b a very young recruit. Whenever v hav a critical situ, v have dhese meetz. Kool?"

"What is the critical situation now?" DX asked feeling unsure. He long forgot what was going on in normal world now.

"I dunno man. But this IQ test will decide people who r gonna solve the critical situation"

"You mean they kind of form a team?" DX asked

"Yeah manâ I never qualified for even 1. These tests test your problem management, team skills, loyalty and much moreâ I yo will be rated accordingly and tasks will be assigned to yo"

DX felt a better option would be explaining people what the critical situation exactly is. He had a heavy day at work. He returned to his apartment at 10 P.M.

DX immediately fell on his bed. Using his eye OS, he connected to Kid Rock. They had a video conference for combined study. DX was able to do all math and rough using *Scribbler*, an application to scribble in his EyeOS.

Next morning, they reached their workplace at 7. At 9, a screen flashed suddenly in DX's eyes

Your IQ Test starts inâ

10â 19â 18â 17â 16â 15â 14â 13â 12â 11â 1 START

The exam started. Every part of test, DX was easily able to attend by mere focusing of thoughts in his mind. He loved XWorld technology. The X-IQ test consisted of mazes, English Language. They were next made to play a single player stealth game. For team skills, DX was made to connect to other people online to solve a problem. The exam ended at 11 A.M.

DX loved the exam though it was tough. The entire two hours were plain entertainment and it completely occurred in his EyeOS. A message was displayed in his retina.

Results Online at XWorld.com/xiq138

DX could use the ThoughtFox browser in his EyeOS to see the results, but he felt it to be useless. He felt he didn't perform so well and returned to his work.

Suddenly, he observed all people rising from their cubicles and walking towards Kid Rock. DX thought Kid Rock for once rocked and was about to congratulate him.

"Congraats man" Kid Rock said shaking hands with DX "Yo topped wid record X-IQ score of 930. Whoa. 700 more than d previous record"

DX was stunned. The next minute was busy with people shaking his hands vigorously ignoring Einstein's call to come back to their desk.

Project DX

INTERCOM: Angel: Congrats DX! I scored 190. The second highest!

DX intercomed her back to say thanks

INTERCOM: Tormod: Congrats Dude! !!

INTERCOM: Einstein: DX! You are by far the most intelligent person the planet has ever seen.

They lifted DX up. He remembered his dad. It was he who made him so intelligent and powerful. And it was Dr. Fermann who made him emotional enough to make him realize the importance of victory. He was happy.

They reached Feldspir Auditorium located in A44 in a train. That is where Einstein instructed everybody to assemble to know what the critical situation exactly is. The auditorium was just a little building which can seat hardly 100. DX was wondering how so many XWorld people invited all over can fit into such an auditorium. His doubt was beaten back the very moment he entered the auditorium. It was built underground in form of a huge oval.

"Wow!" DX thought "underground in underground".

DX guessed the size of auditorium easily to seat a million which was more than enough. People in auditorium started murmuring on his arrival.

A huge bear suddenly hugged him from behind. He turned around and found Tormod in a huge coat.

"Why do you need that big coat?" DX asked

"Pretty cold here" Tormod said "You wouldn't feel that! you have prefabricated skin. What's with the accent?"

"I-I don't know" DX said scolding Kid Rock in his mind.

"Congrats" Tormod said shaking his hands "By the way, Einstein might put you in mock leader XWorld post. When things go bad, you can become a leader by pointing it out clearly"

"I would never do that" DX said "In my view, you are the perfect leader"

"I know" Tormod said smiling "That's why I want *you* to be the mock leader"

DX felt Tormod to be a political genius.

Einstein's walking 3D image appeared in the central screen as everyone settled to their seats. DX couldn't find Angel. He thought of intercoming her but the session started.

"With regard to the recent controversy regarding the Styx Anti-Virus" he began "and with regard to news that would shatter you all, given to me by XWorld Intelligence, Einstein presents to you the 138th XWorld strategy meet"

There were applauses and people stood up. Seeing this, DX also stood up.

"Let the anthem begin" Einstein said

Project DX

Everybody started singing the anthem in chorus. DX tried to move his lips with others.

Welcome to the world of infinite...democracy of XWorld

Where all thoughts are set free, to go anywhere

Where all actions benefit, the human race everywhere

We sacrifice the beautiful sun, crescent moon to work out a big action...

...to create a new world tomorrow, of open civilization

We will save lives, we will rescue lives, and we will love our enemies...

...in the hope that they will realize the power of friendship and become our allies

Let us forgive each other, forgive past and work for a future...

...that calls for integration of all races, religions and nations into a single entity - mother nature.

Let the love we have for each other be our Guiding Light.

After the anthem everybody sat down.

"Let me introduce to you" Einstein said "A new friend of mine, a beautiful female A.I, Helen"

A console opened up and a cute anime gal showed up.

"Hi XWorld" she said in a cute voice "I'm Helen"

"Helen" Einstein said kindly "If you would excuse me, we have some work over here please"

"Ohâ!" the anime said in a sad and heart breaking voice "I miss you Einsty. Bye Everyone"

With that the console closes. Everyone had a laugh. DX thought the anime was very cute.

"XWorld Intelligence" Einstein took control after a minute of looking at the disappeared console
"â identified that in a month, Zeino, craftsman of Exterminators, who has already taken control of Russia in a coup will soon conquer all former soviet nations within a month to form a communist stateâ so far so good"

"Recent sources" Einstein continued "I received just yesterday states that Zeino has been promoted to the Council of Foreign Relations, CFR"

DX was heavily shocked. Zeino and CFR means Soviet Union will easily come under the pyramid.

"I knowâ and most of you know, the Russian Army wouldn't favor anything like this" Einstein continued
"But my dear friends, imagine 800 SEERs parading into every territory including Uzebekistan, Ukraine etc.
Which army could stop them?"

DX almost fell down from his seat. Facing a single SEER itself was hell at Stalingrad Mission and without the help of Angel, neither would be alive today. 800 SEERs means destruction of obstruction.

Project DX

"I feel no one in our front who could be an effective enemy for the SEER than DX. But since he is a junior, he would join 20 men led by Mr. Stevenson. The list of these 20 members off to destroy the SEER areâ€"!"

A list popped up showing 20 men. DX felt these 20 men including himself are doomed to graveyard.

A red light glowed in one of the front rows and Angel stood up. She was dressed in pink pajamas and looked fresh.

"Yes Miss Angel" Einstein asked

"Sirâ€"!" she said "DX had extreme difficulty to face even a single SEER. I witnessed it. Facing 800 SEERs is too much. I wouldn't like to lose 20 of our bright seeds"

"Ah" Einstein replied "It's my mistake. Actually the SEER Resurrection program is still under development now. They have only one SEER. The scientists who created the SEER were gassed and all technical documents were burnt fearing confidentiality. Intelligence indicates that the schematic of this SEER would be used to create more SEERs in two days. So the SEER must be blocked within tomorrow night. Otherwise it gets more tougher to block itâ€"!" and in two days..Boom!... we have 800 SEERs"

[think of full form of SEER, thought citation needed]

A red light glowed somewhere in the middle.

"Yes Giri Siddeshwaran?" Einstein queried looking at the boy who stood up

"Why don't you call a jet fighter and destroy the SEER?" he asked

"For the last one week" Einstein said "The SEER was never reported outside. Moreover, the SEER has a powerful star force shield over it. Team Stevenson, be prepared for the unexpected. Get ready. Your mission operation starts tomorrow at 6 P.M."

"Next" Einstein continued "Zeinoâ€"!"

Several photos flashed on screen showing a pale and tired looking man with short greasy hair.

"Zeino" Einstein said "Can be taken as the next Hitler in the making. He is in fact more dangerous than him. He will go to any degree to form Soviet Union. And by creating a Soviet Union, the pyramid will be stronger than anything ever seen"

Einstein waited to see any red light glowing. Many glowed, but he ignored and continued

"The leader Zeino has a vision" he said "We need to capture Zeino. When we capture the leader, we captured their vision. I hereby declare, Team Tormod led by 30 people to go in stealth to attack the most powerful mafia family the planet has ever seen, the Exterminators"

The list of team members flashed on the screen. Angel finds her name among it. The whole team stood up. There were applauses.

"Team Tormod" Einstein said bravely "Gear upâ€"!" your mission starts at 5 pm XWT"

"Over to Tormod Guldvog" Einstein said "Lead XWorld"

Project DX

Heavy claps as people get up to applaud him. DX imagined himself in that place.

"Good eveningâ !" Tormod greeted "Lots of people asked me about the K2 doctrine that DX has retrieved heroically"

There were claps and applauses as DX stood up, waved and sat down.

"K2 doctrine is essentially a username and password" Tormod continued "With access card to enter a confidential blog. Such cards are given to select members of the pyramid. When I tried to access the blog, it doesn't give me updated info. When I asked Dr. Fermann, he said K2 is disturbed and cannot remember when he had kept the doctrine as such. So I made thisâ !" "

Tormod showed another document that looked similar to the previous one.

"It is exact copy of the doctrine" he said "Now we need to put this back in DX's dad K2's home secretly. When he finds it, he will start updating the blog and we can get information"

"For this" he continued "We need stealth placersâ ! someone who can place items in stealth. As per X-IQ results, the best person for this is DX"

For a while DX prayed to god to get this mission so that he need not face the SEER.

"But realizing that he is now a most wanted "terrorist" in "normal" world, we pick up two others who are also perfect as per X-IQ. Anisha Murgesen and Wang Tai"

A beautiful Indian girl and a handsome Japanese man stood up. There were claps. They sat down.

"Your mission would start at 10 AM XWT" Tormod said "Any queries"

The queries session went on for an hour. Later when they were leaving, Tormod and Angel accompanied DX.

"DX" Tormod said "I feel your mission is dangerous. I asked Einstein but he told me not to show favoritism. If you want, we can switch places"

"I have faced the SEER before" DX said bravely "I will face it again. Just bring it"

Angel immediately hugged DX.

"I know" she said "You will destroy it!"

"Einstein told me unofficially that you are mock-leader" Tormod said smiling. DX winked.

Later that night, DX was reading the classic Harry Potter books but his mind was elsewhere. He knew he could face the machine and dodge her bullets but still fear grabbed him. He got on bed and slept in meditation.

Chapter 27: Tormod Guldvog

It was a barren land with people lying and dying on its surroundings. Those who could afford a small scythe were able to dig a small burrow and sleep in it. Thousands of bodies lay dead. And thousands fought for food parcels being dropped from rescue copters above.

Some of these food packets even contained poison as a plot for killing mass number of unwanted people. Cripples and old people were simply thrown here. Unemployed and people having very low IQ were destined to die here.

Shawn was hungry as he did not have food for three days. He was walking hurriedly towards the food packets. He did not mind even if these were poisonous. Suddenly a group of 10 tall men overtook him and fell over these packets like mad dogs. This meant hunger for fourth day. Shawn felt this barren place to be lucky to have flowing water from a nearby canal. Other barren lands for mass killing of unwanted died more of thirst than of hunger.

A copter landed amidst the people. This was like a dream. No vehicle ever came to barren land. The hunger struck people ran towards the copter for rescue. But the gun protruding from it rained bullets on those who approached close killing them. The door opened and a tall and strong, blonde girl came down. Tall and strong she must be as she was well fed, simply because of the fact she was wanted. She was wanted because she was intelligent. She was intelligent because she was lucky by birth. She was lucky by birth because she belonged to a superior race.

"I need Shawn" she shouted. Shawn first hesitated but when she called again, he walked slowly.

"I am Shawn" he said. She beckoned him to board the copter. As he got in, the door closed and copter took off. It dropped a missile below effectively killing thousands assembled there.

Shawn was taken to a palace. No body told him why. He was given excellent clothes, excellent food and an excellent job. This went on for 10 days. Shawn felt he was in heaven and lucky. But why did all this come suddenly? He was supposed to die in barren lands as he was unwanted.

"You are wanted" she said

Suddenly he turned back to see the blonde girl naked, standing at the entrance to his bedroom.

"You belong to DX race" she said "Records were mistaken"

"Ohâ!" Shawn said "I could have guessed"

"Take off your pants" she said sensuously.

"Excuse me"

She came forward and dragged his pants down. She was too tall for him. She dragged him into his bedroom and dropped him onto the bed. She got on top of him and mounted his manhood into her womanhood

"We need to reproduce Shawnâ! to create more DXs" she said running her silky hands through his long hairs "I need you to fill your seeds inside me"

Project DX

Shawn realized he was going to come. And suddenly he exploded into an orgasm.

DX woke with a start. It was another wet dream in just two weeks. But this time he wished he never woke up. He suddenly realized his mission today. It was about facing a monster. DX worried at how insecure his life had become, be it Styx or XWorld. His life was under threat having to fight monsters like SEER. At first he thought of complaining to Einstein but later realized that 19 more people were ready to fight - why not he?

The dream of reproduction of his race seemed cool to him. But he still did not get close to anyone as much. Angel was good. Maybe he could propose to her and then marry her. But Disgaea is cuter. She also had psychic abilities. DX felt his mind going mad with thoughts. He immediately sat in meditation. He felt something pierce his third eye.

Later in the day, DX started planning mission in blank pieces of paper. He might have a better idea as he faced the SEER face to face.

Knock knock

"Come in" DX said

Tormod entered

"Still using classic knock knock - instead of electronic bell?" DX asked

"The only way for Einstein to not know. Damn, the whole XWorld is networked under him and his stupid threads" he said sitting down

"Anything confidential?"

"No - . In fact yes - !" he said "What do you think about Angel?"

DX wanted to say about his "reproduction" plan with her or Disgaea but Tormod would shoot him there if he spoke something stupid like this.

"Nothing - . Why?" DX asked

"Is she perfect for me?" Tormod asked coming forward with a blush.

"Oh - !" DX said with a surprised look "So you love her, don't you? Great"

"Not yet. But would love to have her as my wife. Are you sure?" he asked

"Yeah - ! but I never thought you would fall in love with someone - !" he said

"But wait a second" Tormod said moving back slowly "Why am I telling this to you? You are just a machine? An A.I. can't understand love!"

"Says who?" DX said proudly "I am thinking of proposing Disgaea"

"Dis - ! who?" Tormod asked unsure

"The gift girl!"

Project DX

"Ohâ ª now I get it" Tormod said looking sideways "Butâ ª I think she is mad"

"I am mad too. I am mad about her" DX said trying to counter Tormod "Are we perfect match?"

"Yeahâ ª yeahâ ª it's fine" Tormod said dismissively "Except if you didn't mind your wife reading your face every morning"

DX laughed. He felt it super awkward when someone reads his face.

"How many gifts did she give you?" DX asked

"Noneâ ª !" he said

"Why?" DX asked feeling surprised

"I asked her why? She says that all I am is ambitious and she hates ambitious men. She feels ambitious men are never peaceful" Tormod said

DX was ambitious in a sense too. He wanted a new DX race to form. Tormod bade him bye and left. Disgaea was not the one in DX's mind now. It was the SEER. He looked at the figures in which he planned to evade SEER's laser bullets and take it down using EMP grenades. But looking at SEER's magnificent body, DX was unsure if EMP grenades would have any effect.

At 4 p.m. DX thought of bidding goodbye to Tormod and Angel. He went towards the strategy room. But they had entered mission briefing room.

"DX!" someone called from behind. It was Stevenson, his team lead

"Come this wayâ ª its almost time for our briefing" he said

"I was thinking of wishing Tormod and Angel luck" DX said

"They will leave directly. Come this way" he said

DX followed Stevenson. He bought his own design in case they ask him his opinion.

The mission briefing room was elliptical with seats on one side and a huge screen on the other side. Einstein's 3D picture was dancing with Helen's 3D picture on screen.

As soon as Stevenson entered, Einstein kissed Helen goodbye. The screen refreshed and showed a message

Einstein (E8-931): Mission A80 - Team Tormod

Tormod was impressed by multithreading capability of Einstein. He sensed the seat near Angel to be empty. He raced towards it and when Angel suddenly looked at his direction, he slowed down and sat besides her.

Angel thought he had something important to tell her. She looked at him eagerly.

"Ohâ ª hi" Tormod said as though he noticed her just then

"Are you okay?" she asked looking at him strangely

Project DX

"Yeahâ why do you ask?"

"You seem very shyâ i" she said observing him "â land very clowny too"

Clowny?

"No. I am serious" he said

Einstein entered and demonstrated their mission and their strategy. They connected via teleconferencing to team Stevenson's conference room. DX required team Tormod to disable all communication links so that the SEER base won't be on Red Alert. They accepted it.

"As per the strategy, Tormod and Angel are spies acting as Mr. and Ms. Wilson" Einstein briefed "Their role is simple. Board the subway express, capture Zeino after wearing protection suit. Then rest of team can board the subway. Abduct Zeino and get him to XWorld"

Team Stevenson got briefed. They got dressed in traditional military army uniform and left. The two teams intersected at terrace as they got on their copters. They wished good luck to each other.

INTERCOM: Einstein: DXâ good news. Anisha and Wang have succeeded.

The copters left in opposite directions.

Abandoned Underground Secret Station

Exterminators Pickup Area, Moscow Subways

It was a deserted subway. Dried blood can be seen clearly on the walls. The subway train that can take Tormod a.k.a Mr. Wilson to Zeino was to come after half an hour. The backup team waited secretly hidden to await instructions from Einstein.

Tormod and Angel were given hidden protection suits. These were hidden inside their dresses. All they had to do was to think *protection* and focus on it. The suit would zip out of their dress and cover them completely. The suit was bullet proof and so they could attack anyone without fear. Immediately the rest of team would respond and aid in capture.

They were waiting for the train sitting in a corner of the station.

"Do you remember the code actions?" she asked

"Yeah" Tormod said "Do you love â Oh my God!?"

"Sorryâ .come again?" she said looking bemused

Tormod's eyes were filled with tears.

"I just got an intercom from Helen" he said "My parents are dead. Trapdeath"

"How come?" Angel shot "Didn't they take the antivirus?"

"Damn the pyramid" Tormod shot in anger.

Project DX

He became silent.

"Maybe you should go back" she said with concern

Tormod felt a tinge of disappointment cross his heart. For a while his mind was blank. The train was approaching.

"Hey Angel" he said "Please hide with the other troops"

"What?" she wondered "I was supposed to come with â"

"Go!" he screamed. Angel went slowly with slight fear of Tormod towards the well hidden troops.

A man in thick coat came forward.

"Vladâ I believe you are Mr. Wilson" he said

"Yeahâ !" Tormod said removing his specs

"No need of code actions" Vlad said "We don't have timeâ ! get in"

Angel sat in a cozy corner of subway well hidden from the train. She wanted to go in case of any emergency. She was about to fall asleep.

INTERCOM: Einstein: Hey Angel..., Tormod is not responding to my messagesâ !!

"No responding" she shouted and got up. A gun shot was heard. Angel ran towards the rail road. The train started leaving as XWorld troops moved in. In front of her, lay Tormod in a pool of his blood. She ran to his body. He was still alive holding his stomach where probably the bullet was fired.

"I love you Angel" he said "â I am sorry I failed you all"

Tears fell from Angel's eyes onto Tormod's wound.

"No you didn't. You did great" Angel said

"Take care of DX" he said with tears in his eyes. Angel nodded and hugged him. She felt his body twitch as he became stiff. She sensed his inability to breath. He was dead.

She let go of him as XWorld troops attended on him. Angel saw a train coming from the adjacent railroad. She stood in front of it anticipating death. At the nick of time, an XWorld cadet fell across and rescued her. He then slapped her.

"Are you crazy?" he shouted "Don't you realize how precious life is?"

"She needs some time" his colleague said and took him aside.

Angel went to Tormod's body and couldn't stop crying.

"Have we lost them?" Zeino asked Simons in the train.

Project DX

"300 miles per hourâ no hope for them to chase us" Simons said in a calm tone.

"Mikeâ inform Jackâ tell him to make SEER base more alert. These bastards might be planning an attack there too" Zeino, the pale tired looking man said.

SEER Secure Base Station

Russian Advanced Defense Systems

Jack: (Via Satellite to Base): Zeino coup needs more forces. Send troops to protection of Zeino. SEER is more than secure in itself. I repeat SEER is more than secure in itself.

Chapter 28: DX vs. SEER

"My shirt seems quite different Einsteinâ what is it?" DX asked while they approached the SEER base with stealth.

INTERCOM: Einstein: It is nano-fiber dress. It projects you invisible even when you have clothes!

"Wow" DX said

"Lots of copters are leaving" Stevenson said leading his team stealthily "Is the base being shifted out?"

INTERCOM: Einstein: No Steve. Intelligence indicates the SEER is still held there. There is news I don't want to break now. Please destroy the SEER at all costs.

"Roger" Stevenson said

INTERCOM: Helen: Team Stevenson. SEER is being held in a shielded incubator to replicate its code and engineering parts. The original team was gassed to death so this is the only way for them. Please destroy SEER before they can make a replica of a million SEERs.

"Helenâ can we trust her?" DX asked around. His team shrugged.

INTERCOM: Einstein: It's the prototype A.I. of Styxâ turning into our side. Anyway, act with stealth. She can be trusted.

They reached the outer wall. DX sent his grasshopper-camera inside to scan the base. They saw the video scan of base in PDA. It was tight integrated security with several guards armed with rocket launchers and machine guns.

INTERCOM: Einstein: Stealth is must. Any alarm will put base under alert and SEER will be transported to undisclosed location.

"There is heavy security on ground" Stevenson said sternly "We cannot breach from outer wall as planned"

INTERCOM: Einstein: Rogerâ move towards isolated area, N14deg E12deg latitude [citation]. I am sending a stealth copter there.

They waded back secretly towards forest and then into an opening. A copter was waiting for them. The pilot got down.

"Hello" he greeted them "I'm Distelmoâ get in!"

The whole team got inside the stealth copter. It raced up. They traced the whole base from a safe height scanning the schematic. Finally they reached the roof top of tallest building.

INTERCOM: Helen: Goodâ. SEER is held in this building.

"That's luck" Stevenson said making himself comfortable "Any great ideas how to break insideâ team"

"I need architecture of this building" DX asked for.

Project DX

INTERCOM: Helen: *File Received Architecture-Building432A.JPEG*

Scanning through the schematic architecture, DX sketched a plan and explained it to his team. They all showed thumbs up.

Invisible On DX thought. He became invisible. He raced downstairs from terrace. SEER was one floor below the top most one. He then ran inside the library. He bypassed the alarm. Immediately, Alarm was rung in library alone. Troops from bottom floor came up to library. An invisible DX went outside the library, locked the door, and encrypted the key pad of automated security mechanism.

Invisible Off DX thought. He became visible. He felt it was his luck that library door was open.

INTERCOM: Einstein: Rogerâs team move in to last but one floor, where SEER is located.

The whole team reached the floor. Stevenson led them and fired *Soul-Saver* at anyone who obstructed the way with his stealth pistol. Finally they reached an elevator with an encrypted key pad. A message was written on top of the elevator.

SEER Storage and Data Centers

DX tried to connect to the key pad and hack it. But it was encrypted using very complex biometrics. He felt it unbreakable

INTERCOM: Helen (To DX only): I know the key code to the elevator. DXâs I can only trust you. No one else must enter the elevator

"Why?" DX asked. His team mates look at him surprised

INTERCOM: Helen (To DX only): There may be spies.

"Team" DX said "Helen says she wants only me to go upâs!"

"This is crazy shitâs!" Stevenson said "This might well be a plot to kill you. She is from the defense order"

"As of this moment" DX said "I am sure how to save myself. If it is the SEER above, I am ready to destroy it. Please assemble at terrace and wait for me"

They didn't move. They felt extremely doubtful at Helen's dubious move.

INTERCOM: Einstein: Team Stevenson, please listen to DX. It's important for us to finish the task.

They wished him good luck and left reluctantly.

INTERCOM: Helen: Goodâs! The access code is 06628

DX entered the lift. As the lift approached the top, DX was able to see shoes of some people. *Invisible On* he thought and focused on it. He became invisible.

DX saw rocket launchers in their hands. He felt lucky to be invisible. But to his surprise, they started pulling the trigger. DX rushed forward pushing them on ground. He immediately took his pistol and fired anesthesia clips at them. They fell down unconscious. DX thought *Invisible Off* and focused on it. He became visible and

Project DX

was able to see his own hands.

A laser bullet stuck the gas cylinder besides DX effectively throwing him to a corner. DX felt lucky his shirt and skin was fire proof. He saw the SEER in front of him throwing another laser bullet. DX dodged it and hid in a corner behind a steel box. A room was open on the other end, but DX felt SEER might throw a missile into it if he ran there.

DX knew he had to do something very fast. He could here the SEER moving forward. He immediately took his EMP grenade and threw it up. It fell on the ground and exploded. DX came out. SEER was in a mess. Its electronic components have failed completely. Its sensors were still fine making awkward noises looking at DX. Its shutter in its back was open. DX ventured bravely to look into it. He saw broken electronic components. He gave a smile. But that smile was wiped off when he saw the broken electronics restructuring themselves to form a full fledged circuit again. DX knew he had to do something. He did not have infinite EMP grenades.

He suddenly remembered his emergency pouch that had a centurion flash grenade. DX didn't know what it was but that was the only best option left. He took it out, ran to a safe corner and threw it into the shutter.

He hid behind. There was no noise. DX went towards the SEER slowly from his hiding. To his surprise, the SEER was off, whole electronic components inside was melted to ashes. Only the outer cover remained intact. He closed the shutter and breathed happily.

Clap clap clap

DX turned back in surprise. A huge man with dragon tattoos all over his neck was standing outside the open room.

DX goes bravely near him. Simons was a mere mortal when compared to the SEER.

"Synergyâ the tyrant, the idiot, the asshole himself" DX said in a calm tone imitating him.

"DXâ I must say I am not surprised by the disrespect" he said trying to imitate DX unsuccessfully

"What would a federal CIA head do illegally in Russian Advanced Defense base?" DX asked

INTERCOM: Einstein: Useless to ask these questionsâ just kill him

DX wanted to listen to Synergy's words.

"CIAâ is in contract here. Anyway that is none of your business" Simons said moving towards the SEER and rubbing its fine body.

"SEER makes Russia strongerâ and the United States hates that. These stupid people already gassed their scientists to death. So through a fool called Zeino, we now have control over Russia..."

DX was about take his pistol out

"Do not take it out" Simons spoke fast for the first time "â or I will switch the SEER on"

Simons opened a panel on SEER's body which had certain controls.

Project DX

DX acted as though he was scared and stopped.

"DX!" he said "you wasted a chance to become a hero. The pyramid actually planned to propagate the media that *you* had devised the cure. But you forced it to call you a terrorist, an "International Terrorist"!"

"So be it!" DX said dismissively "Now a deal! Will you tell me about Orion code or do you want me to take your life away?"

Synergy looked at him angrily and started the SEER. It was not responding. He ran back and opened the shutter. He almost lost his mind. DX pointed the gun at him.

"I don't know the code of Orion" he said calmly "It belongs to the Illuminati!"

"Stopped?... Go on!" DX said moving forward "Illuminati!? Who the hell are these guys?"

"So you already know" Simons said

"So who is the terrorist? Huh?" DX shouted in anger.

"We are the dictators DX!" Simons shouted back "Not terrorists"

"No Simons" DX said with a smile "You are lower than illuminati. They are above you in pyramid"

"It doesn't matter" Simons boasted "People will lick my shoes now to polish it. Why don't you do that now Mr. Pyramid Bottomed?"

Someone from behind pointed a gun at DX. DX knew his body could not be harmed by mere bullets. He attacked the soldier and threw him out of the window to his death below.

"Ahaaa" Simons shouted

DX turned back to find Simons in a safe corner pointing a rocket launcher he might have picked up from the dead cadets.

DX thought *Power of Force* and focused on that thought. His retina displayed!

Power of Force On

DX immediately jumped out of the window. A rocket whizzed past him. He was able to attach himself to the walls of the building. Simons looked out of the window and spotted DX. DX immediately thought *Invisible On* and focused on that thought. He became invisible.

Attention: Bio Energy Low. Shut down in 20 seconds

Simons started firing guessing DX's target to be terrace. DX climbed the 5 storied building in a zigzag manner reaching the terrace. At about the same time, he lost his bio-energy and was visible again. The copter was waiting for him.

"Synergy is coming. We need to go fast" he shouted. He boarded in as the copter took off the unsuspecting base. It was perfect stealth mission.

Project DX

INTERCOM: Einstein: Mission Success

DX gave a smile. Everybody around him hardly grinned back at him. They looked very dull.

"Anything wrong?" DX asked.

They looked at each other to explain him.

"Somebody tell me" DX shouted.

"Tormodâ !" Stevenson said sadly "Tormod has been killed"

DX felt his heart break. He couldn't stop his tears.

Chapter 29: The Ultimate Visionary

DX returned to XWorld. Everyone was crying around street corners. They bought flowers to honor Tormod and entered his house.

DX entered Tormod's home. Angel was sitting on the dining table. She looked a wreck. Her hair was fluttered untidily and her face was half wet with tears. On seeing DX, she ran and hugged him. She cried on his shoulders.

DX made her sit and he took the adjacent chair.

"We realize" Angel said in tears "how much we love someone only when we lose them"

DX was at loss of words. He proceeded to Tormod's room where his body was placed. There were several flowers surrounding it. A terminal was open in front of him. A hologram of Einstein was seen. It was crying.

Looking at Tormod, DX's eyes started getting wet. How much he wished his dear friend to get up again. DX saw Tormod's face. It had a frowned look. It was a look that suggested he needed peace.

Disgaea entered in. She saw Tormod and took out a dove. She kept it near his head. Tormod's face eased and became peaceful as that of Buddha. DX felt this might be an illusion.

"I always wanted to give you this" she said in tears to Tormod "I will miss you". She went off in tears.

DX felt that a lot of people have misconceptions about the gift girl. Disgaea seemed to have supernatural powers too

Angel came in after a while. This time, she seemed a little calm.

"What can be done Einstein?" DX asked

Einstein sighed sadly.

"Tormod was irresponsive inside. Even when he saw his assassin take out gun from his coat he did not activate the protection suit. He was in a different world altogether" Einstein replied

"Why? Did he have any trouble?" DX asked

"I don't know" Einstein replied "He didn't even give the documents and he did not do the internal code actions properly" The news of his parents death shocked him

Einstein paused to look at Angel.

"emotional shock" Einstein said heaving "I need a word with Angel can you please excuse us DX"

"No problem" DX said as he went out.

"Did he love me?" Angel asked Einstein looking at Tormod

"It seems so" Einstein said "That's what he told you last time"

Project DX

Angel rubbed his hairs.

"I am at loss of words" Einstein said "He never spoke of his parents. His father wanted him dead and believed him to be a terrorist"

Angel went to her room later. She was extremely sad and had no mood to eat or do anything. Tormod's image was coming to her mind everywhere. The rose flowers were drooping. It understood her feelings.

She went near them and spoke to themâ

"If Tormod told me he loved me at any point of time" she said "I would have called mission off regardless of Einsteinâ. And we would have gone together to Hawaiiâ. Forgetting pyramid, forgetting XWorldâ"

As she said these words, tears fell.

"May his soul rest in peace" she prayed.

INTERCOM: Einstein: Hey Angelâ can you please come to DX's room immediately?

Angel didn't understand what the emergency was. She nevertheless got ready and proceeded to DX's apartment. DX, Stevenson and Einstein's hologram was assembled at the sofa. A blank sofa was left for her. She sat down.

"Angel" Einstein began "This is a personal meeting. DX says he wants to lead XWorld now. What is your opinion?"

Angel felt a fit of rage cross her.

"Noâ not a good idea" she said sternly

"All right. Why do you think so?" Einstein asked her

Angel began thinking. DX felt sure that she was cooking reasons now

"He is so â young and inexperiencedâ andâ" Angel said searching for words "he is a machine. Not a human"

"I assume you aren't over Tormod yet" DX said "And I have a soul, you said it yourself"

"While we are wailing over Tormodâ" Angel screamed with her highest tone "Why do you want to be a leader within hours? So you wanted power so badly huh? You ruthlessâ. Machine"

DX took some time to digest what she said and replied calmly.

"My mind unfortunately is a little fast in decision taking" he replied "Sorry about that. Tormod's death shouldn't be in vain. Lookâ it might seem an easy scoop of ice cream if we all shut down XWorld, forget Pyramid and go to the Himalayas for the rest of our livesâ. But please think of the big picture"

Angel started listening but she still gritted her teeth. DX never saw anyone this angry.

Project DX

"Big pictureâ picture of millions becoming slaves. Imagine if Tormod's saw thisâ can we let our leader become a slave in the hands of the tyrannical pyramid"

Angel eased but seemed a little dissatisfied.

"I met Synergy one on one Angel" he continued "I tried getting the code of Orion but he doesn't know. The pyramid just doesn't know many atrocities it is doing. But don't you think we need to liberate this world? Giving it the freedom and happiness we always wanted to give it? I want to liberate itâ and I am ready to face any challenge for it"

Angel turned towards Stevenson. But he was looking at DX

"Mr. Stevenson" she asked "What do you think?"

"Angel" he said "with all respect, DX led the team amazingly in destroying the SEER. When we said destroy, he permanently disabled it. He is courageous"

Angel gave a smile to DX and nodded.

"You lead hero" she said

"Wonderful" Einstein said "We hereby proclaim Tormod as our *Ultimate Visionary*. We will proceed to conquer the pyramid and liberate the world from evil"

Everybody smiled.

Chapter 30: The Coliseum Network

Angel was taking her morning walk. She saw Ravi working on something in his laptop. When she went near him, he hid it.

"Anything secret?" she asked him

He nodded. Angel noticed her EyeOS was unable to detect Ravi. He was disconnected from XWorld network. She dragged him by the collar.

"You are disconnected from the network. I need an explanation" she asked threateningly

"S-Sorry" he said "It was order of DX. We are working on a secret project called Coliseum Network"

Angel let go his collar.

"What is this Coliseum Network?" she asked bewildered "I never heard of such a project in XWorld"

"ItâErâ it is a sort of back door communication infrastructure for emergency" he said. Angel thought for a while and understood. She immediately messaged DX to meet him at cafeteria in the evening.

DX and Einstein spend time in Einstein's villa trying to discuss their future actions. They eventually decide to organize key posts properly

Finally Einstein came with the structure.

XWorld Leader DX

1. *XWorld CEO Mr. Stevenson*
2. *XWorld CTO Mr. Albert Einstein*
 1. *XWorld Chief Advisor Angel*
 2. *XWorld Evangelist Helen*

Einstein declared Helen to be the new Evangelist. Angel would be promoted to chief advisor.

"But Mr. Albert" DX told him "I am extremely doubtful about Helen. She sent me alone in elevator to face three guys who were ready with rocket launchers. And she broke the news of Tormod's parents death, right when he was in the middle of his mission!"

Einstein immediately called Helen. A cute hologram of Helen showed up besides Einstein.

"I really don't know anything about the three guys" she swore

"You did an extremely wrong thing by mistrusting my colleagues to be spies" DX accused her.

"It was a spy from who gave you off at Pyramid Prison in Egypt" Einstein remarked.

"Who is this spy?" DX asked "Tormod told me he never got caught"

"It was hidden from you DX. It was none other than Distelmo. But he later regretted his move"

Project DX

DX remembered the name suddenly

"You mean Distelmo, the ace pilot?" DX asked

"Yesâ!" Einstein replied "Even the closest of allies can spell trouble. So a little care is primary"

"Now that you are a leader" Einstein said winking "There are little secrets you should know"

"I thought XWorld was an open civilization with no secrets" DX said "I am a little surprised here"

"Even an open civilization has its vulnerabilities DX" Einstein replied "Move on to the adjacent door. The access code is 07789"

DX obeyed. After all who would stop the offer of being offered to know a secret?

He typed the numbers in the keypad. The door opened up to reveal a mini subway. It was deserted completely with a train waiting there.

INTERCOM: Einstein: Switch your camera eyes on. I will direct you from here.

DX turned his camera eyes on.

INTERCOM: Einstein: This is Fiona, secure access train. It is automated to take you to a secure place. Get in it.

The door of train had a retinal scanner. DX placed his retina few meters from it. An infrared sensor scanned his retina

Positive Identification: DX. Authorized

The door opened as DX got in cautiously. It was a luxurious interior inside. The color of lights inside was light green. But DX had a preference for blue color. As soon as he entered, the light color turned blue. DX was mesmerized. His mind was being read by the train.

He sat down and started browsing internet in the PC attached to his seat. It was this magnificent train all for himself.

He was browsing some business related websites. He suddenly noticed the time.

"Hey it has been 10 minutes" DX sent his thought to Einstein "The train hasn't started yet"

INTERCOM: Einstein: It had started and reached the destination just now. Fluid mechanics actually give people inside a feel like the object is not moving or moving too slowly

"Oh yeah" DX said remembering the elevator. DX got down and was facing a huge research underground building.

A very senior looking scientist came out scratching his head.

"Greetings O lord of XWorld" he said kissing DX's palms making him feel awkward "I am Siden Flamestick, research engineer at this place"

Project DX

"What is this place?" DX asked looking around. He could see missile prototypes and people working on them through the glass doors of the building.

"It is XWorld Military Technology Laboratories, XMTL as we call it. Welcome in" Siden invited

INTERCOM: Einstein: Remember the anti-matter missile Tormod was talking to me the first time we all met? It was developed here, a very secret place hidden below the Antarctic.

DX followed Siden inside. There was an exhibit of a huge real looking missile in the hall. On top a display readâ ;

Vision Guided Centurion Missile- VGMD, realization of a vision

"What is this?" DX asked "It looks like an ordinary missile to me"

"Don't get deceived by its appearance" Siden said "It has centurion based sensors which can give accurate measurements of target. The OS inside the missile predicts where opponent's next move will be. Centurion energy flow inside the missile guides it as if it were a car to be guided in heavy traffic. It has got powerful image processing software in it"

DX walked a massive escalator. Several scientists were passing by whispering about him. DX observed an interesting difference between scientists in "normal" world and scientists in "XWorld". Here scientists looked very casual, most of them in t-shirts and jeans. Many female scientists wore miniskirts

DX managed to hear some scientists talking absolutely strange thingsâ ;

"Alexâ ; you must be crazyâ ; unless the cube crystal can fit into the spherical molecule, I don't see how this can be solvedâ ;"

"A cube can never fit into a sphere of its own volumeâ ;. But I can change its densityâ ;"

They reached level one where a weird looking geek called Ferguson met DX. He showed a prototype gun. The room's front was covered with a red wall.

"How does this work?" DX asked him

Ferguson answered it with a smile. He went across a corner of room and operated on an electronic device. The red wall rose up and showed a simulated battle field. He beckoned DX to enter the simulated battle field.

"Don't worryâ ;" he suggested "The bullets are bull shit"

DX thought a scientist using *bull shit* was too much. He entered the battle field and hid behind a rock. He slowly rose above and aimed at one of the dummy soldiers and shot. He ducked down. He knew he did not aim properly. He rose up again and to his surprise, the soldier had fallen down. He went off. DX felt surprised and he shot at another soldier aimlessly. The bullet guided itself and tracked the soldier. It stuck him.

DX was awestruck with this. He returned from battle field. Ferguson was laughing.

"Each bullet has a microprocessor in it. It can track your target and balance its projectile" he said

"T-This is great" DX said in utter disbelief.

Project DX

"If this doesn't satisfy you" Ferguson continued "It has multiple weapon arsenals"

Ferguson used the touch screen display on the gun's side and selected rocket launcher mode.

He then pointed at fast moving tanker and shot a rocket at it. The rocket traced it and blasted it off.

"Solid shitâ lha haaa" Ferguson shouted at his pointless victory.

"Shall we move on to level two?" Siden asked him

DX couldn't wait. Level 1 itself seemed too advanced for today's technology. At level two, DX found himself walking amidst several robots. But these robots were different from normal robots. They were heavily armed.

A punk looking teenager came forward. DX remembered Kid Rock. Though he hated him, he kind of missed him.

"I'm Venom Hill, [citation: heard him somewhere] lead of this junk"

"You don't look like you can lead yourselves" DX said humorously.

"Yo mus be corporate crap" he said with a wink "wanna play a game â l online"

"I am not much into games" DX said

"I'll teach you"

He made DX sit in front of a mega screen TV. DX was given some controls. A game started.

Robots vs. HumanS VI: The Final Frontier

DX had to take the side of robots. He was given an arsenal of weapons while his human opponents had just ordinary guns. Moreover, when they fired him, nothing happened to his robots as they had powerful coating. He was able to switch among several robots on battle field. The other robots were played by the computer itself.

The humans even tried to call air strikes, but the robots were able to fire guided rockets and destroy them. Finally, within half an hour, the humans fled. DX won.

Everyone behind him clapped. DX left the game with a smile

"I never expected so much fun in level 2. I thought it would be more serious than level one"

"Its serious dude" Venom said with a wicked smile. He went across and opened the red wall. A battle field opened up. To his surprise, DX saw the same robots that he played against in the battle field. The dummy humans, who were robots in disguise showed white kerchiefs.

"The future battle field" Venom declared "â l belongs to robots"

"â l while we humans play computer games" DX concluded. He felt so impressed that he gave Venom a chocolate bar he actually bought for Disgaea.

Project DX

"Shall we go for level 3?" Sedan asked DX.

DX nodded.

Level three had a huge door after a reception hall. It had a logo of Delta. Below the word **Force** was written in embolden language

INTERCOM: Einstein: Delta Force, is heart of next generation defense systems. Only you alone shall enter this facility

Sedan left DX alone. After the door opened, DX had to undergo a series of security checks from DNA identification to fingerprint scanning.

Finally, he was led to a huge hallway. There was an ancient Chinese artifact. DX remembered it to have been stolen long back.

INTERCOM: Einstein: Now activate the demo by pressing code 6788 on the keypad to your right.

DX activated the key pad. A small air copter came with a missile on top of it. It dropped it on the artifact. DX wanted to scream for a while not because of the concern for the artifact, but because of the fact that he was in the same room.

The missile suddenly got absorbed by a shield surrounding the artifact deriving energy from it. Instantaneously, a panel opened on the side and it fired a rocket at the air copter. The copter blasted falling aside.

INTERCOM: Einstein: A variant of Russia's Star Force. But Delta Force can even find out who fired the missile and attack them back.

Later that night, DX and Einstein organized a strategy meet. Everyone assembled at auditorium.

Einstein's 3D image appeared on screen with a sad look.

"We need to observe 2 minute silence for Tormod's soul"

The whole auditorium went silent. DX felt as if Tormod's soul was crossing all of them. It was an extremely emotional moment. Some people had tears across them.

"Tormod is now our ultimate visionary" Einstein claimed "His vision was to liberate the planet of evil forces in a manner that doesn't harm humans. That means in a non-violent manner"

There was a huge and deafening applause. DX felt Tormod's soul rejoicing.

"We now welcome our new leader, with an IQ of 938, DX!"

DX entered the stage amidst roars and applauses. He felt this to be his best moment only next to party night with celebrities.

"I put before you my dear friends" DX began "a three step plan"

Orator On DX thought and focused on that thought. His retina displayed

Project DX

Oration Powers On

"The first plan of all" DX shouted "Is revenge of XWorld. We are lions. Roar"

There was a roar among the crowd

"If you didn't hear me properly, we are lionsâ roar"

There was a huge deafening roar this time. DX now felt he has energized the crowd by feeding into their subconscious mind, the feel of a lion. Angel felt a little insecure. She closed her eyes.

"And as lions, we need to avenge our Master's death. We need to kill Zeino"

There was a deafening applause. The audience chanted *Kill Zeino, Avenge Tormod's death.*

Angel wanted to shout at everyone to stop this beastliness.

"We have a spy from Styx" DX continued when the roars finally stopped "Helenâ now girlfriend of Mr. Albert Einsteinâ I guess she's his third love then"

There was laughter among the crowd. The cute anime popped on the screen behind DX.

"She's here to make an announcement" DX said as he stepped aside

"Hello XWorld" the cute anime started "How many of you here heard of the Grand Cathedral"

Very few hands shoot up.

"Ok" she said "Grand Cathedral is a brave new attempt by the Illuminati to take control of the whole world by 100 percent. All we know is it is a machine for world domination. So what could be it?"

Helen waited for five minutes. A red light glowed. It was Giri Sidheshwaran.

"Yes Giri?" Helen asked

"They already control most of the people using popular media like television and Hollywood" he said adjusting his long hair "May be they are going to introduce next generation popular addictive media".

"Thank you Girus" Helen called him sweetly "Any other views?"

Another red light glowed.

The screen displayed *Fido*.

"Yep Fido?" she asked

"To me, Grand Cathedral seems like a place of God. It probably must be a place where they want to stay and control people and perhaps call themselves gods. So much in a name!"

"Thank you Fido" Helen concluded "In videos that DX got from Styx Pyramid Prisonâ"

Project DX

Video of Lab scanned by DX at Pyramid prison was shown behind Helen's anime.

"I see much extensive human testing and nano-genetic engineering. I guess they are off to create a new species. I hereby request DX to form a separate plan to be made for research on what exactly this Grand Cathedral is about"

DX took control of stage.

"Thanks Helen" he said smiling at her "This is exactly what I had in my mind as plan 2. We need to crack the code, break the ice whatever you call it. Grand Cathedral shall not remain a mystery"

Audience clap as Einstein's 3D image appears on screen. Helen kisses him as they both vanish.

INTERCOM: Stevenson: DX! Imagine how these two A.I.s could have sex. I guess virtual sex.

DX gawked

"Another point" DX said "Helen is our new Data Interpreter and Evangelist. Angelica is promoted to the post of Chief Advisor"

There were cheers among the audience. People around Angel congratulated her. But she didn't look happy.

"The final point in this meet is" DX continued "the cure. As per Estefana Collmenero, the defense order's cure has a hidden amino acid sequence that can only be decrypted using the Code of Orion. I hope that no XWorld cadet has taken or will take their version of cure"

There was silence.

"We need to find out the cure fast. Thus as per plan 3, I request Angel to fasten up cure development"

Cafeteria Corner

5 hours later

DX and Angel were chilling out at Cafeteria just opposite to Disgaea's gift shop. They had their camera eyes off. Angel looked very angry and chilly.

"What happened?" DX asked finally "You asked me to come here and then you are"

"What is the Coliseum Project?" she asked cutting him off.

DX took some time to think

"What's wrong with it?" he said finally "It's just another private network"

"The fact that all people working on it with their transmission disabled" she said "Are you hiding this from Albert?"

DX felt this strange. It was obvious that he was hiding this from Einstein, but yet she presses him more.

"Yeah" he nodded

Project DX

Her expression became scornful.

"You brute" she said "Einstein deserves to know everything! XWorld is because of him. Yet he never became a leader. He is so selfless unlike you"

DX lost his cool

"You seem a tough nut to crack" he blurted

"I hate you" she said in a high tone "âfor this if I knew earlier, I would have never recruited you"

"Angel listen" DX said in a soothing tone. This was not the Angel he always liked "I feel really uncomfortable. Your way of speechâ is simply putâ irritating"

Angel's frown relaxed. But it became cold.

"Then how irritating is it for me to be thrown from an Evangelist to a Chief Advisor?"

"That's a coveted post Angel" DX stressed on her "It gives you lots of power"

"Coveted?" she mustered her tears "If I "Chief Advised" you to stop the Coliseum project, will you stop it?"

DX thought for a while.

"It's not a good idea" DX said

Angel's tear fell across her cheeks. She got up and prepared to leave. DX chased her down the street.

"Angel listen" he said dragging her back to face him "I feel really uncomfortable by Einstein's relationship with Helenâ she comes from defense order. That's why this Coliseum network OK"

DX started walking away in a fit of rage. Angel chased him and dragged him back to face her.

"So you are pointing out the Einstein has made a wrong decision?"

DX sighed.

"No Angelâ !" he said "Love is blindâ Whole XWorld depends on Einsteinâ His threads control everythingâ don't you think we might need a private network for emergencyâ Remember, XWorld is a very sacred place and it must not be too dependent on anyone. Such organizations fall off"

Angel shrugs after a while.

"I trust you DX" she said finally "But I don't know where you are headedâ This was never the case with Tormod"

She started leaving. DX suddenly felt his emotions react

"If you think Tormod is such a good leader" he shouted at her "just keep it in your mind"

Angel walked back to him fast with wide angry eyes. DX hated this gaze of hers.

Project DX

"Just slipped off" he said "Sorryâ its peer pressure"

"You guys are same" she said gritting her teeth "You call Tormod as ultimate visionary of non-violenceâ and boom! Next moment, you speak of "killing" Zeino"

"Are you crazy?" DX asked her frankly "It was Zeino who was responsible for Tormod's death"

"Tormod is not dead" Angel said "He is still alive in our heartsâ I can only say that every life is preciousâ and only God has the right to give or take life"

With this, Angel went into the darkness. DX was feeling his relations with Angel break down by the day. She was one among his best friends. Already, missing Tormod to DX seemed like missing a part of his own life. He felt like crying.

Angel dashed into someone on the way. It was Disgaea. She started reading her face. Angel wanted to go away before Disgaea could find out something. But the gift girl chased her down the street searching her green bag that DX gifted her.

"I'm not in mood Disgaea" Angel said "Leave me"

"Here it isâ !" Disgaea screamed as she offered Angel an hourglass.

Angel took it and put a cold expression on Disgaea.

"You are asking me to be patientâ !!" she said "You "mad" girl"

Disgaea's smile wiped off. She put an equally serious expression.

"Yesâ !" Disgaea replied calmly "Be patientâ !."

Angel went away in a huff.

Chapter 31: The Big 3

It was a bright room. The interviewers were looking pitifully at the candidate who failed to clear their expectations. It was application for Technician job at Nevada Desert. The candidate was unwilling to leave inspite of their repeated appeals.

"I need this job sir" he pleaded "my sister is not well"

They went inside board room and had secret discussions. They came out with a big smile. One of the interviewers had a bond paper with him. The candidate went through the paper. It was a bond that asked for his full cooperation for scientists to experiment with him and that Area 51 Corp. would never be responsible for anything that happened to him.

He thinks

"We are ready to offer 3 million credits as your first salary" the interviewer lured him "besides we will provide all medical support for your sister"

He signed on the papers

K2 Giza Fort

Egypt

K2 stood on the terrace under the soft roof of his newly constructed Giza fort house. He sipped the rose sherbet placed near him. K2 wondered at how much he achieved in his life. From that of an ordinary student to the director of CFR, he worked very hard. He also formed a core member of the trilateral commission making him rise up in the pyramid.

He now plays a key role in Illuminati led conspiracy for global domination. From early childhood, K2 loved architecture. He viewed the Giza pyramids as a real wonder. Such a structure stood through races and centuries! He patterned the defense order pyramids in the same way.

He felt strongly that it was architecture that has got him his current high status position. He was the architect of many government funded project like Monarch Butterfly project which deals with passing knowledge to descendants, Project DX where he got his magnificent son, Project Styx - a world wide consortium of military force and now, Project Grand Cathedral, a grandiose project to establish all round dictatorship over the planet. Now he is next just to the Illuminati families and Simons in the pyramid.

A copter landed on ground. Zeino started walking majestically towards Giza fort. The success of Russian Coup and formation of Soviet Union made him more than cheerful. He reached the terrace. K2 greeted him with a hug.

"Congrats on becoming the director of trilateral commission" K2 wished Zeino

"Thank you" Zeino said grinning

"How did you manage formation of Soviet without the help of SEER?" K2 asked him.

Project DX

"The mass nationalistic movement" Zeino replied "The Army general was in our support. We were able to sack the leaders and throw em' in prison"

K2 patted the tired and disheveled Zeino. But he had an inner pride that his son destroyed the SEER.

"Get all of those stupid leaders to Pyramid prison. Otherwise they might contact the Mystiques" K2 said

"I think the Mystiques are curbed now except for your mysterious son" Zeino said "We killed their leaderâ thanks to Simons"

The door opened and Simons entered inside

"Ahâ !" K2 said "the man himself"

"Congrats Simons" Zeino said "For becoming the president of the European Union"

He nodded.

"We are all just one step away from the secret world government" Simons said looking at K2.

"Yesâ !" the handsome bald man said "the grand cathedral is under development. It must be ready in 5 weeks"

Synergy gave a smile of satisfaction.

"We have conquered the Mystiques" Zeino proudly remarked

"Yesâ !" K2 said "We have dug 5 miles underground. They might be just one mile below. Fools tried to fool us making us believe they are 300 miles underground!"

Simons and Zeino laughed.

"But we shouldn't be overconfident" Simons said slowly "Taunt and torture the male prisoners with hammers and axes. Rape the female ones with monsters till they puke the truth out"

"We tried worse things than that" K2 said proudly "They are beta programmed not to lose truth to death"

Simons put a displeasing face.

"I have a better idea" K2 suggested "These prisoners would serve perfect testers for the Grand Cathedral"

All three agree on this idea.

K2 got a phone call. He answered it and puts it down.

"Dr Fermann will be here in few minutes" he said

"Fermann is an influential member of the pyramid" Simons said coldly "â whatever he be, he does not have any clearance to know about the grand cathedral. It's an order from the Illuminati itself. So please keep mum"

Dr. Fermann entered. They all smiled at him.

Project DX

"What brings you here my friend?" K2 asked hugging him.

"I was sent by the UN to investigate the state and living condition of prisoners here and I must say, I am extremely pleased by the maximum extent of torture they get" Fermann pointed.

"You know" K2 said with a guilty expression "We can extract a lot of information only then"

"Yeah" Fermann said "Still you couldn't extract much information huh? What patriotism!"

"Do your work and leave" Zeino snapped

"Sure" Fermann said smiling. He handed over a letter to K2.

To

UN Secretary for Humanitarian activities

I hearby declare the status of prisoners in Styx Pyramid prison is according to norms of UN Prison Conditions. Their life is satisfactory.

Dr. Fermann Laudee - Chief Inspector

Professor K2 - Director Styx Global

"By the way" Fermann asked "How is the GC going?"

They were shocked on how Fermann heard of GC.

"Absolutely fine" Simons said calmly.

Fermann couldn't extract much from that.

"What is it exactly?" he asked

"As much as I can tell" K2 said holding Fermann's shoulders "I respect you a lot but you do not have clearance to know about this project"

"Thank you" he acknowledged "I apologize my interruption"

Fermann left.

"The day when the GC launches" Simons declared to both of them "All major cities of world like NYC, Tokyo, Berlin, New Delhi, Melbourne will see a huge balloon rising up and yet people won't ask a question about what it is"

Simons opens his bag and shows a small prototype balloon. In front of it, a picture of an eye inside a triangle can be seen

Novous Ordo Seclorum

The New World Order

The pyramid has risen above you!

Chapter 32: Dark Games

DX was standing on terrace of a derelict building with a woman. It was a peaceful day in the morning. One strange thing was that the building had no staircase or elevator. He did not understand how he ever got up.

He bothered how he and the woman besides him would get down. Suddenly few greyhounds appeared and started marching towards DX. He tried to run away but stopped at the edge of terrace.

He screamed "Mom! Help!"

The woman moved towards him. He tried to look at her face, but he was unable to lift his head. As soon as she came the greyhounds went away.

"Thank you mom" he told her. But her face was all blurred.

Suddenly she screamed "I hate you DX" and pushed him down the terrace.

DX woke with a start in his room. He looked around the black couch. He tried to capture every receding detail of his dream. He tried to remember the woman he called "mother" and the greyhounds on the terrace. He gazed at the floor and thought about it. Last time when he dreamt of the SEER, he had a discussion later at strategy meet.

"Bad dream?" a known female voice said.

DX looked around finding Angel in his nearby couch reading his relativity book. She was wearing a black t-shirt.

"Oh!" DX reacted "I didn't notice you! It was a strange dream! My mom came in it"

"How did she look?" Angel asked throwing the book aside.

"Dunno" he said "Her face was masked. But I wanted to see her badly. This is strange"

"I understand" she said nodding

"Forget this" DX said "What did you come here for?"

"I just wanted to ask! What do you feel about K2! Your dad?" she asked in a preplanned tone.

"He is more than my dad" DX said remembering him

"Do you miss him?" Angel asked

"I feel sad" DX replied "First I hate him for his evil ambitions! and the next moment, I miss him! And I am sure he would miss me too"

"I am transmitting some pictures to your EyeOS" Angel said as she transferred pictures from her memory to DX's memory. [wow!]

DX received Angel's pictures. They were pictures of Zeino hugging and playing with a cute little girl.

Project DX

"She looks like his daughter" DX remarked

"Yes! " Angel said "as per intelligence, she is his daughter"

DX found a typical father-daughter bond in the pics. In one of the pics, the little girl cuddled up Zeino's lap and slept peacefully.

"If you kill him" she said "she will miss him forever"

DX felt a tinge in his heart. Angel's words *every life is precious* kept on baffling his mind.

"We won't kill him" DX said almost instantaneously "We will just arrest him and his little daughter"

Angel smiled.

DX left to take a shower. Angel took the hour glass out of her bag.

"Thanks Disgaea..." she thought and sent her the message

DX was still left wondering about images that Angel sent him. He sat near a flower shop reading a book in his retina. He heard familiar voice in front of him. He minimized the book to find Disgaea wrapping some honeysuckles in her bag. She smiled at DX and left. He started following her closely. Disgaea visited a mirror shop and observed him behind. She turned back with a wide smile.

"Anything?" she asked

"Oh! nothing" DX said

"Want a gift?" she asked trying to guess his thoughts. For the first time, DX felt she misread his face.

"No! "

"Anyway you can have this" she said taking out a bottle of wine

"Hey!" DX said surprised "That's against the protocol! XWorld cadets are completely non alcoholic"

"Hey! " she said poking DX's nose "You are trying to say something but not courageous enough"

DX smiled at his misconception. She did read his mind.

"Disgaea! . Will you marry me?" he muttered really fast.

He felt guilty at himself for having said this. He was after all just another robot! silicon dust as his school enemies used to call him.

She put a strange expression on her face.

"Come again?" she asked waving both her hands up

"I love you" he said with a little higher tone "Will you marry me?"

Project DX

"Wow this seems harder than fighting the Illuminati" DX thought

Her face brightened easing DX's anxiety. She smiled widely and gave him the honeysuckles.

"Sure I will" she said and walked away dancing

DX looked at the honeysuckles and scratched his head. He wondered whether Disgaea understood what "marriage" exactly means

Later that day, DX paid a leisurely visit to Angel's nano-genetic facility. He felt being a leader has its own advantages in spite of all the pressures. A leader could roam around freely and take his time to do a task. Or it may be that he was being a loafer.

"DX I am busy" she said in the main hall running with some sheets "our team has finally found the protein sequence to destroy the virus's cell wall"

"Only five minutes!" DX pleaded to her.

They went to a nearby café.

"I proposed to Disgaea" DX told Angel after ordering chocolate milk shakes "She accepted it!"

Angel felt a little tinge but it disappeared quickly.

"Oh!" she said "Good! Did she understand?"

"That's the trouble" DX said with a beam "She just said "Sure I will" and walked off as though nothing happened"

"What else has to happen? She accepted it!" Angel said sighing.

"You know!" DX said with a naughty smile "Hugs! kisses!"

"Ok stop your imagination" Angel interrupted before DX could go any further.

They started sipping the chocolate milk shake.

"Did you tell her about DX chromosome?" she asked.

"Huh?" DX asked back puzzled

"About your chromosome" Angel said continuing sipping "Your baby won't have any of Disgaea's features. Her family tree would end here if you both married"

"No! I did not tell her" DX said sadly "But I guess she wouldn't mind! in any case she is my!"

DX stopped at Angel's serious gaze with her cute green eyes.

"It's very bad of you DX" she said "I can't tell you anything more because I am not your "advisor". Tell her"

DX thought for a while. He had no mood to have the chocolate shake.

Project DX

"I don't think she will understand a word of it" DX blurted out

"Well then tell!" Angel said whimsically

"No! " he said "It's not required. We are fine as of now"

They spent drinking the rest in silence. To DX it looked like a cold war with Angel and love war with Disgaea.

Joseph Stalin Parliamentary Building

Communist Soviet Moscow

Zeino sat in his swing chair. He listened to his iPod beats of Rock Hardened Band in high volume. He wished playfully that his head blasts off the music.

His evil mind started thinking!

"Today I conquered Soviet Union! tomorrow, I conquer the world!"

His mobile started ringing with a strange number

AAADSDD.Einstein.SecureCallSys.222

He attended the call

Call Start

Zeino: Hello who is this?

Einstein: This is Albert Einstein from the Mystiques.

Zeino had no idea who Albert Einstein was. His IQ was all about conquest, power and fame. He pressed a button below his desk that requested his team to track the caller

Einstein: Hmm! a pause? No use trying to track me. This is a secure private call with a secure new protocol.

Zeino was not that technically literate.

Zeino: What do you want?

Einstein: Your resignation from the coup and restoration of order

Zeino (laughing): Rejected

Einstein: Else you will be under arrest

Zeino (laughing): Arresting in Terrorist hands is called abduction. In either case you can't save your own leader from death. Balls you would arrest me.

Project DX

Einstein: Our men have started infiltrating the buildingâ so stop this coup.

Zeino: Not so fast Oilstain. [ha haa]. I don't get threatened by false calls. Surrender before we track you.

Einstein: Whewâ you are as stupid as your ambitions. Two of our men have reached your door step. Surrender now.

Zeino's sub conscious mind told him for a while this might not be just a call of threat. He dragged his pistol out of his drawer. Two men in heavy armor and helmet entered. They had hour glass logo on their dress. Zeino tried to shoot them in vain. There was no effect. They cornered him, kicked him and punched him.

After Zeino dropped the weapon, one of the men spoke.

"I am Stevensonâ XWorld CEO. You are under arrest for being a traitor" he declared

"I am not a traitor" he shouted. Zeino felt hurt when someone mistrusted his love for country.

"What else are you? Selling your nation to the Illuminati" Stevenson shouted back slapping him. Without waiting for his reply, they dragged him out of the building. On the way, Zeino saw all his comrades down.

"Don't worry" a cadet said "They will be back to consciousness in few hours"

Stevenson gave a Soul Saver dose that immediately drove Zeino to unconscious state and took him towards the copter.

XWorld Prisoner Soul Purification Facility

XWorld Corp. 300 miles underground of China

DX and Angel connected online to Einstein for a chat.

Chat Started: Participants DX, Angel and Einstein Thread A-222A4

DX: Einstein... Zeino's daughter Candela is in adjacent room. Please create a virtual reality scenario just like that. Candela must be a 3D object that can be cut.

Einstein: Just gimme 5 mins

DX arranged a screen in front of Zeino who lay unconscious and tied up to a chair.

DX: Einstein, get the VR to be displayed on this screen

Einstein connects to XWP Address of the projector and displayed 3D image of the little girl Candela sitting alone in a cell. It looked completely real.

"DX are you sure this is simulated animation and not realâ?" Angel asked concerned

"I assure you it is animation. There won't be a cut on original Candela I promise" DX said

Zeino woke up after a two hour wait. He saw two people staring into him. He recognized one of them to be the bio-kid.

Project DX

"Where am I?" he asked yawning

"300 miles underground" Angel promptly replied

"Bullshit" Zeino said laughing "It must be some garageâ gimme some damn Menna whore"

"Mind your tongue" DX defended Angel "Or I would get it cut off"

"So I understand" Einstein's hologram said as soon as it appeared on the console "They used Menna to lure this guy"

"C-Candolla is it?" Zeino asked suddenly looking at the screen.

"Yesâ!" Angel said "your loving daughter"

"She's a bitchâ!" Zeino said snorting "âalways throws away my Mennaâ! I beat her and locked in the room for two daysâ! and now you get her back to me!"

"That's later" DX shouted "Tell us two things. Oneâ! the Grand Cathedral and twoâ! the Code of Orion"

"Listen" Zeino gritted "You all are vulnerable. You will die miserably just like your leader Tormod died. We have whole army, power from British Royal Family, international bankers and multinational corporationsâ!. You guys are just a bunch of young junkies. Instead join my sideâ! I will pay billions and make your rise in the pyramid"

"We are not in your mercy Zeino" DX said laughing "It's "you" who is tied up. Now we can even kill you"

"What do you want?" Zeino asked sighing

"I already askedâ! you neo Hitler, the Grand Cathedral and the Code of Orionâ!" DX shouted

"I won't tell you in a thousand years" Zeino snapped

"Your daughter is in the other room" Einstein said "as you can see on screen"

"So?" Zeino asked unwavering

"For her sake atleastâ!" Einstein said "âtell us the truth"

"Are you threatening me?" Zeino asked "Kill her for I care. I can get another daughter"

"Einstein" DX ordered "Cut her hands"

The screen showed a man entering Candela's cell with an axe. As Candela was trying to escape, he catches her and cuts off her arms.

Zeino laughs.

"It's with this hand that she threw my Menna packets away" he said "I would have done that personally"

"Good" DX said "Now what if we cut your arms then?"

Project DX

Zeino sweated. He felt they definitely would do that if need be.

"Spare meâ !for all I care" Zeino begged suddenly.

BLAM! BLAM! BLAM!

Bullets zip through Zeino's chests and head as he dropped dead along with his chair.

DX turned behind in shock. It was Angel. He seized the gun from her and slapped her. He dragged her outside his room.

"Have you gone nuts?" he screamed "He was about to vomit the truth"

"For all I careâ !" she screamed back "He is no humanâ ! he relishes his daughter being cut, but fears for his own!"

DX took a pause between his rapid breaths.

"Didn't you tell life is precious?" he said calmly not looking at her.

"Is what he leading called "life"?" Angel fought back DX's words.

"Listen to me" DX said pressing her cheeks hard, staring angrily into her green eyes "I have had it with you. You not only tried to modulate me but also spoilt a great plan. For all I careâ ! as leader of XWorld, you are herewith fired from post of "Chief Advisor""

Angel was in tears when DX left her cheeks. He didn't turn back and started leaving away.

She chased him, and dragged his hands to face her.

"I have to give you something back" she said coldly.

She slapped him back. DX started back angrily.

"Thank you" he said

Angel started leaving.

"I hate you" she shouted turning back.

Angel's Bedroom

Nano-Genetic Research Labs Quarters.

Angel got ready to move to nano-genetic lab late night. The cure seemed very hard to crack. She felt going through protein sequence again might give her some hint. Einstein refused to send it to her bedroom system because of security reasons.

While she was about to leave,

"Hello?" she heard a sound.

Project DX

It was Einstein's hologram on her console.

Angel sat near it and started weeping.

"Why are you weeping?" Einstein asked her

"Why do I hate him so much?" she asked the E=mc² scientist

"Hate whom?"

"DX!" she said "But he is soâ. You knowâ insensitive and unemotional and always hungry for power"

"No Angel" Einstein said calmly "If he was so, he wouldn't have come to XWorld at all"

"Then why do we end up fighting all the time?" she pressed on weeping more

"It's human behavior [citation needed]. These problems started ever since DX took Tormod's place right?" Einstein queried

"Yeah" Angel replied after a quick thought. Her weeping stopped "They started since DX wanted to"

"Hmm" Einstein responded

"Today he fired me" she said with a sense of hate

"Angelâ" Einstein calmed her down "Understand that DX would have done the same thing if any other person was in your spot"

"I don't knowâ" she said resting her forehead on her palms "I feel our relations are strainingâ but he is my friend. I start hating myself sometimesâ and I murdered someone"

"Relax Angelâ. Relax" Einstein said "At this moment; I am sure DX must be worrying about you. I had a conversation with him. I am sending it to your console"

Conversation between Einstein Thread T55D122#22 and DX

DX: Einstein, I feel kinda worried. Did I do anything wrong by firing her?

Einstein: Hmmâ Not from a leader point of view. But it's wrong from a friend's point of view.

DX: I think I was correct from a friend's point of view too. She started hating me more and more. I think she needs to do what she does bestâ developing a cureâ butâ.

Einstein: DXâ.calm downâ boys don't gloom

DX: We were once so happy friendsâ Things changedâ. I lost my dad's presence. I lost Tormodâ and now, I lost Angel.

Einstein: DX! Pull yourself up! You are a leader

DX: Yeahâ I know

Project DX

Einstein: I guess you need some sleep.

DX: Yeahâ

Einstein: Good Night

DX: Good night photon-dude

Chat Ended. Thread Logged and Destroyed

"He is right" Angel spoke to the hologram "I need to focus on the cure"

"Yeahâ!" he said

"Einstein" Angel said "You tell me everything and hide nothing from me. I can't hide anything from you"

"Hide what?" he asked "XWorld is open civilization"

"That's what I thought" she said sadly "DX is making it closed slowly. He is creating a private network called the Coliseum"

"What?" Einstein replied putting a shocked expression "Why would he do that?"

"Frankly" Angel replied "He doesn't trust Helen"

"That is dirty to hearâ!" he said "It makes me angry. But that's my life! Before World War II, I had to depend on Anti-Semites for a life. During World War II, I had to depend on US who in-turn used my knowledge to develop atom bombâ and now, I have to depend on DX"

Einstein frowns. It was an expression Angel never saw on $E=mc^2$ scientists face.

"Calm down Einstein" she said "You misunderstood it. It's just an emergency network if Helen turns out to be malicious"

"Helen is a wonderful person" Einstein claimed

"I am sure she is" Angel said only to soothe him "Heyâ! I am going to research facility"

"You seem tired" Einstein said "And it's too late in night. Get some sleep"

"I need to check the protein sequenceâ!"

"No problemâ!" Einstein said "Get into your pajamas. I will transfer the sequence to your home computer"

Angel smiled.

Chapter 33: The Code of Orion

DX was signing XWorld recruitment forms. Demand for scientist positions in XWorld was rapidly increasing. DX only wished they get the right people. Spies are biggest enemies of any organization.

Someone knocked the door in a majestic manner. DX guessed it to be some senior personâ perhaps Mr. Stevenson.

"Come in" he said

A handsome old man with white beard and red hat entered. It was Dr. Fermann Laudee. DX ran from his seat and hugged him.

"What a pleasant surprise!" he said taking their seat in the room's discussion area.

"Yeahâ !" Dr. Fermann replied "You seem to be too busy to come out of XWorld"

DX nodded.

"Better not" Fermann said taking out his PDA "the whole world has tagged you to be a terroristâ you are being linked with almost every major catastrophe in this planet by the pyramid"

"As much as I guessed" DX said looking at dismay at the PDA News which showed DX shaking hands with Al Abdul Malik, Al-Queda head "These idiots did link me with Al-Quedaâ god save me"

"I have come with an important discovery" Fermann said "âand I want you to listen to it patiently"

DX dropped his pen and focused on Fermann.

"A month agoâ !" he began "Einstein informed me that only 5 people from Mystiques were ever captured by the defense order. And in that, two have escaped, two died revealing the Proving Grounds and the other is you who also escaped from the Pyramid Prison"

DX was a little surprised here

"I never thought of that" he said "At defense order, they informed me that about 500 cadets were captured"

"Worseâ !" Fermann added "Now they report about 60,000 being caught. Eventually I decided to visit the prisons on pretext of UN prisoner welfare check. Let me tell you, a quick arithmetic shows that the numbers easily cross a million"

"Who are all these people when only 5 people from our side have ever been caught?" DX asked

"Being on top layers of pyramid, I was allowed to interact with themâ the prisoners are army forces of Styx nations"

DX was startled. He switched his camera eyes on and started transmitting their conversation to Einstein.

"How could this be possible?" DX asked

Project DX

"The defense order treaty originally commanded nations to surrender their national armed forces for the cause of peace. Now, the Pyramid prison, a secret prison eventually is like a concentration camp – even worse than that. All these soldiers are being killed systematically"

"It looks crazy" DX retaliated "Why would they do this? I mean – why would they weaken their own army?"

"Simple. Next step might be planned invasion of all nations with their secret special force. These nations are simply nude without army"

"This is sick" DX said "This has to stop"

"You must do something" Fermann urged "Fast – as fast as light"

"We are completely unready Dr. Fermann. We don't even know what the Grand Cathedral is about. We don't even know what their cure is about!" DX replied in desperation.

Fermann nodded. A robot bought in some coffee. They had a sip.

"I heard that you guys killed Zeino" Fermann pointed

DX nodded.

"He is far from a living being. At least animals cared for their loved ones. He doesn't give a damn about his daughter" DX said

"But it's no use killing anybody" Fermann snapped "Now Simons is trying to take over Soviet Union leadership. Already the bastard is president of European Union now"

"The code of Orion is bugging me" DX said "If only we have an indigenous cure –"

INTERCOM: Angel: DX – I need you to come to Nano-genetic labs. We have a breakthrough here.

DX and Fermann reached nano-genetic labs as fast as possible catching the next possible train. There was a huge rush of people. Just as a filled stomach makes a way for a delicacy like sweets, people immediately made way for DX to enter.

On reaching lab halls, DX saw a smiling Angel. He smiled back. Her eyes were red probably because of lack of sleep.

"What's the news then?" Fermann asked unable to understand enthusiasm of people around.

"Our cure worked on rats!" Angel almost screamed "We tested it on ten rats. Now we are 95 percent confident it will work on human blood too. We wanted to test it live"

INTERCOM: Einstein (To Angel): I am video broadcasting this to all XWorld members.

Angel projected macroscopic view of virus from blood sample of a patient into the huge screen. The virus hidden inside blood cell can clearly be seen. Then, the team injected anti-virus into blood stream. The anti-virus entered into the cell through a secure opening using nano fibers inside the cell wall. It quickly converted virus components into energy. This energy was transferred to mitochondria, energy center of any cell through a nano-fiber. The anti-viral molecules then securely came out of cell and went on to another cell.

Project DX

"The cure is a success!" Angel declared. There was a deafening applause that never seemed to end. DX inadvertently kissed her.

"Congrats" he said hugging her.

"Thank you" she said unable to control tears.

DX met Giri Siddeshwaran who was actually controlling automated systems to inject virus.

"Where did you get infected blood from?" DX asked him curiously.

"Ohâ I don't you know" he replied "One of the two corpses they sent down had been infected"

It occurred as flash to DX. Suddenly he found a clue for Code of Orion.

He immediately connected to Einstein

XWorld Chat: Session A445: Members DX, Einstein Thread R44#44S

Einstein: Yes DX. Shoot

DX: Do you remember the two dead bodies we found that defense order sent us?

Einstein: Yes of course I do. One of them was infected.

DX: If they both were dead, who could have operated the lift?

Einstein: Actually I never thought of thatâ I shitâ and camera was off during first 100 miles of journey, after which they were found dead.

DX: Who logged on?

Einsten: Charon did.

DX: And I guess it must be Paolo who had the virus?

Einstein: Yesâ I how did you guessâ I?!

DX: It's a simple puzzle. Grand Cathedral looks like something with which they control people. And code of Orion might have something to do with this and I feel Code of Orion is sort of mind control program. Code of Orion is triggered on one who took the cure. And Charon logged on. It means he led the way to elevator which he wouldn't as he is loyal. But he did it because they were able to control him. The other guy was obviously infected. Once on the way, Charon disabled camera and shot his friend on their control. Then he shot himself again on their control and threw the gun somewhere outside the elevator through air lock.

Einstein: I get itâ I. So Charon is triggered with the Code of Orion!

DX: Yes! We can study his nervous system to unlock the code of Orion.

Einstein: Excellent thinking DX. Wait a minute while I contact team Angelâ I

Project DX

After few minutesâ

Einstein: Another good news. Charon's body is preserved safely.

DX: Good. Now inform this to team Estefana Colmonero. I hope they are ready to break the code. Send them Charon's body.

Einstein: Roger.

Later that night, DX went towards gift shop for Disgaea. But the shop was closed. Disgaea was coming across the street with a food pack in her lunchbox. On seeing DX, she placed a very sad expression. She sat down in a park bench. DX sat near her. Silence fell across the lonely street.

"You know" Disgaea began "My dad was just like me. He could easily read other's difficulties and he tries to help themâ never caring much for selfâ I "inherited" that from him"

She stressed the word "inherited". DX felt a little worried if she knew about DX chromosome.

"Whenever I give a gift to someone, I know for sure that it would change their way of life towards goodnessâ and I would really and I mean really like my son or daughter to "inherit" that nature and ability"

"I understand" DX said holding her hands

"I am really sorry DX" she said

"It's all right" he said nodding.

"But I still love youâ deep in my heart" she said moving closer to his lips. She brushed her lips against his and kissed him deeply.

"It's my fault" DX said as they walked towards her shop "I should have told you this before"

"It's all right" she said taking out a rose flower and handing it to DX.

"What is this for?" DX asked

"It's a gift of course" she said.

The flower smelt of onion. DX remembered this typical fragrance somewhere.

INTERCOM: Estefana: DXâ A huge discoveryâ The code of Orion is a mind control program as you predicted.

DX bade bye to Disgaea and took the nearest Subway train to Thomas Labs Incorporated.

He found Estefana, Fermann and hologram of Einstein in a design room.

"What is the discovery?" DX asked taking his seat.

"Once the virus is triggered" she explained like what looked a 1000th time "An external signal can influence patterns of signals in neuronsâ thereby alerting the thought of the person. Virtually they can control his

Project DX

thoughts and actions"

She showed a slide using her pen projector.

"How do they send microwaves to the correct intended person?" DX asked

"Using thisâ" Estefana said showing a small chip "â" This chip was found in Charon's brain. It acted as a microwave receiver"

"Great work Estefana" DX praised her "Please document your findings and spread it to as many people as possible! The cure is a virus in itself!"

"It's no use to spread it" Fermann said sipping black coffee "100 percent of population has already taken the cure"

"â" and all it takes is a trigger to turn them all against us" Einstein concluded

"Atleast everyone in XWorld are safe" DX said feeling a sense of satisfaction within him.

"No wonder the Pyramid banned brain surgery except by Styx doctors. So no one could ever find out this nano-fiber coated transparent chip in their brain" Einstein quoted

DX went to his room feeling tired late night. He secured Disgaea's rose inside his cupboard. He couldn't get its meaning.

As soon as he fell on bed, he fell fast asleep.

Angel entered her apartment. Candela was fast asleep on the sofa. She kissed her forehead. Candela woke up with a dull face. The little girl had green eyes similar to Angel's eyes.

"Where is my dad?" she asked her. Angel felt very guilty. But she knew it was her responsibility to explain.

"He is resting in the most safest place everâ" a world without fear, guilt, happiness, pain, pleasureâ" the astral world" she explained

"Can I also go there?" the little girl asked

"A time will come when God will call you there. Till then, you must wait" Angel told her. She took out milk bottle that she purchased and gave it to Candela. The little girl started sipping milk. Angel took Candela on her laps. She looked at Candela's bruised hands hurt by Zeino.

"Who will love meâ" if my dad is in astral world?" Candela asked suddenly.

"I will" Angel said. Candela smiled and continued sucking milk. She fell asleep on Angel's laps.

DX woke up hazily in his apartment. It was just 3A.M. There were heavy noises outside. DX rushed out and got the shock of his life. The whole area around him was devastated. Houses burnt, people injured. Clearly there has been an attack on XWorld.

Chapter 34: Retrospection

DX walked around the dismay streets mesmerized completely. Stevenson came running towards him with heavy armor.

"Are you all right DX?" he asked in a concerned tone.

"I'm fine. What exactly happened?" he asked

"A horrific attack by defense order cadets" Stevenson replied "Before we could respond, they had left"

"Impossible" DX said sternly "We have a secure entrance"

"Yeah" Stevenson answered "âsecured and controlled by âwellâ Einstein"

DX had his worst doubts. Did Einstein side with Styx?

"How much causality occurred?" DX asked worried

"None" Stevenson replied "But they abducted Angel"

DX felt startled.

"Was Helen involved in Angel's abduction?" DX asked him

"I have no idea o' leader" Stevenson replied "Einstein is still available. He woke us up by sending an MP3 file. But it was too late by then"

DX went to the nearest possible public console and connected to Sir Albert Einstein. His hologram appeared with a drained off look.

"Einstein" DX asked "Can you please explain what happened?"

"Tragedy DX" Einstein replied "Helen abducted Angel"

"I need a retrospection sir" he asked sternly "a retrospection of who Helen isâ why you got her involvedâ and why did you make a melodrama of love with her to fool us"

Einstein started replyingâ

"Helen isâ. a different kind of AI altogether. A bunch of geeks at MIT Labs in Massachusetts developed a prototype AI called JuicyGurl, a typical love program as they call it. Overtime, the program became a hit as many people worked on itâ in particular because they liked the name, JuicyGurl. Soon it became popular and had its nodes created in many universities like Stanford, Princeton etc. It developed into a multithreaded, multicapable A.I. but still remained feminine. When the US government saw its potential, the project was undertaken by them as project Helenâ keeping their Greek mythology naming style. Helen is now a prototype used for defense order data storage.

Helen is under direct control of K2, your dad. From being a lover girl, she learnt to be ambitious looking at your dad. She wanted to rule the planet. But she knew she was an A.I and sooner or later, they would dump

Project DX

her. So I lured it explaining her that we would conquer the pyramid and make her the princess of whole world. She in turn promised to give us defense order data.

She helped us in many missions later, including the SEERs destruction, in capturing Zeino etc. She told me specifically not to develop a self funded cure at XWorld for HIV2 virus for some hidden reason.

Till yesterday, I hid the fact that we were developing a counter cure. But now, she found it out by reading the logs. As she is an Evangelist, she had access to door codes. Immediately, she called few members of Styx team whom she had control over and abducted Angel"

"Why does she not want us to develop a counter cure?" DX asked puzzled

"That part of puzzle remains mysterious for me too" Einstein said sadly "She told me sternly not to develop itâ and we developed it"

"From your account of events" DX said "I presume your multithreads were sleeping. Why? Does AI sleep?"

"I am an AI" Einstein explained calmly "Not some physical entity to stop them. The destruction was done secretly enough to avoid my notice. The cameras in elevators were hacked. The secret police bots were hacked by her. Helen though a prototype, is a good strategist"

"I get that she must be having some demandsâ !" DX said "Why else would she put this abduction plot?"

"Ohâ I was in a wrong mood. Never thought of that. Lemme connect to her"

After a while, besides Einstein, Helen's hologram appeared. A cute anime appeared with horns like that of a devil

"Hello DX. Hello Einstein. You cheaters" she greeted ironically

"What do you want?" DX asked her

"XWorldâ complete control over XWorldâ or DX. Submit DX to me"

"Why do you want DX?" Einstein asked

"I would give him back to my master K2 and then his trust on me would increase. Then he would give me a key position in ruling this planet. Simple huh? If you give me XWorld, I will devastate Styx with XWorld's magnificent army and become a dictator of whole world"

"So much for a woman" Einstein said sighing

"Excuse me" she said "I am not just a womanâ I am Helenâ a princess who rules the world"

"You can have me" DX said "I submit myself"

"Good" she replied "Now you must come to visit me at MIT where you will be arrested by my men. If you bring your guns and gadgets, Angel is dead meat. Get it?"

"Right" DX said "If Angel is unsafe, XWorld cadets will burn your silicon chips to dry ashes"

Project DX

"We will see to that" Helen said laughing. Her hologram disappeared.

"We can recover Angel" DX told Einstein.

"It's not just Angel we need" Einstein said "We need Helen back too"

DX put a bewildered expression.

"Yeahâ Helen is required. She is the only person in contact who has complete schema and idea of the Grand Cathedral"

DX thought for a while

"I will persuade her" he said finally.

"Don't persuade herâ she is a woman. Rather lure her" Einstein said winking.

DX winked back.

Later in the morning, DX got ready and entered a copter in a remote island. It slowly took off like an eagle towards MIT.

Chapter 35: An offer you just can't refuse

Massachusetts Institute of Technology

Massachusetts, USA

DX entered the magnificent campus of MIT with access code that Helen gave him. He came in disguise of a Dubai sheik. The sprawling campus was filled with young engineers.

DX looked at a cute girl in a corner working on her PDA. She was sort of recording vibrations of a bird on top of a tree and recorded it in her device. She was offering grains to the bird.

"What is this?" DX asked sitting on the grass.

"It's my final semester project" she said "I am trying to learn birdie language"

DX felt like laughing, but something told him that she might succeed.

"Where is Helen?" he asked her

"Huh?" she questioned "What do I know?"

"Helen is a girl who is as cute as the original Greek mythological princess" DX said

"I can be your Helen if you like for some dinars" she offered winking.

DX winked back.

"I am busy now" he said resisting temptation and left.

INTERCOM: Einstein: I think you are lost DX. Helen asked you to ask Tell Tale.

"Tell tale? Now where's that?" DX wondered.

DX kept on walking and dashed into a korean looking girl.

"Ai am sorree" he said trying to help DX get up "R u all rite?"

DX remembered Kid Rock.

"I need to know a place called Tell tale" DX said "Will you tell me where it is?"

"Tell me a tale and I will tell you where Tell tale is"

"Never mind" DX said "I will ask someone else"

"You would ask someone else!" the girl exclaimed "Yo yo red cap yo yeah yo. Come ere"

A muscular guy with red cap came.

Project DX

"Yoâ ¿ where is tell tale?"

"You kiddin meâ ¿ tell me a tale first"

"You see" the korean girl told DX "Its culture here. You must tell a tale to know who tell tale is"

"I would report this to higher authorities" DX tried to threaten

"Ohâ ¿ we are all afraid. Jack off or tell the tale"

"I am here on defense order business. Related to arresting DX" he said

"Then no one here would help you arsehole" the guy said "We love DX, we love his causeâ ¿ we love mystique. Viva la resistance!"

DX was mesmerized. He took the red capped guy to a corner and removed his sheik veil.

"Ohâ ¿ the bio kid DX" he shrieked.

"Shhhâ !" DX asked him to be mum "Here on secret work"

"I understand. I am Amarak by the way" he said "Let me take you to Tell tale"

Amarok accompanied DX to tell tale and bade him good bye.

Tell tale was a small box with a console.

"Hello" DX spoke

"Tell me what you need" the console spoke back

"I need to know where Helen is" he asked "The AI"

"Long long ago, in Professor Henry's personal computer laboratory, three students Larry, Max and Loise created JuicyGurlâ ¿ now called Helen. In the year 1970s she was transferred to MIT's AI laboratory. She is stored in Level 5 guarded by Kerberos the three headed dog. Only some one as mighty in power as Achilles can enter that level"

DX started moving towards MIT's AI laboratory. The entrance had a fountain that changed its shape according to various math curves, Cardioids, Bezier and Spleens.

As he entered the lab, a cute dog on the way smiled at him. He smiled back at it. Suddenly he stopped and thought "*I love AI*"

INTERCOM: Helen: Sorry I was busy arranging men for your arrest. Come to level five. Your ID has access to it.

"Even if I don't have access, I can get access" DX thought. His mind can easily break Kerberos authentication

MIT AI Labs Level 5: Top Secret Government Projects

Project DX

Helen Development Facility

DX entered Helen development facility. The entire room was dark except for one light in center. Angel was tied to a chair below. Her mouth was also tied. He raced towards her. Suddenly some men in darkness attacked him hitting him in multiple locations. After a while DX gave up and fell on ground.

The lights switched on. Helen's anime hologram appeared in a console near Angel. DX went to the hologram limping. Angel was in tears.

"What if I give both Angel and DX to professor K2?" Helen spoke wondering "Angel is an amazing bio-technologist. He can use her!"

DX fell down. He thought *Orator On* in his mind and focused on that thought.

His retina displayedâ :

Oration Capabilities Onâ :

"Hold on Helen" he said getting up "I need a moment with youâ alone!"

Helen thought for a while and then nodded. The muscular men left taking Angel away with them.

"Turn your camera eyes off" Helen ordered.

DX turned his camera eyes off. Helen did the same too.

"Okâ !" he began "Let us now assume that you have given us to K2. XWorld cadets will simply burn you to ashes as they now know your location very wellâ !"

He took a chair from a corner, sat on it and continuedâ :

"Even if you manage to escape, K2 will just use your services and trust meâ do trust me, he will just "use" you. Look at me, I am his son but he never told me he was a CFR leader"

"But hey" Helen interrupted "It's a better option than serving XWorld"

"It won't be" DX answer promptly "Because I am gonna give you an offer, you just can't refuse"

Helen's cute anime came forward and moved closer with interest.

"Listenâ ! the cure is just for XWorld cadets. The world has already got a cureâ ! the wrong cure with code of Orion. XWorld cadets don't need code of Orion. They are already controlled extensively by Einstein. It is a wonderful opportunity for AIs to take over the world.

Can't get it? Oh yeahâ ! if you do join us, you, me and Einsteinâ ! together can rule this planetâ !these humans will come under us. The whole human race will now come under a superior raceâ ! the DX race. It will be time for Mount Olympus to rise againâ ! and we will crowned its Kings!"

"Wowâ !." Helen answered "I require some time to think"

Project DX

Helen showed DX some anime episodes of Naruto XII while she processed DX's offer and looked at it's pros and cons.

Finally she appeared back again with a beaming face. DX rose from his seat and went towards her.

"I accept your offer. I join the XWorld"

DX shook hands with the virtual hologram.

Later Angel and DX took off the silent outskirts of MIT. She looked into DX's black eyes through her green eyes. She saw goodness in his eyes. He had risked his own life to save hers.

She was completely unaware of the horrendous plan DX and Helen sketched to take over the human race. She smiled at him. He smiled back.

Goodness can be evil in disguise.

Chapter 36: The Dark Truth

K2's visitor's voice spoke in his bedroom singing a song. It woke K2 up.

He dressed up and came out.

"Open the door" he spoke to his PDA. The PDA connected to home electronic network and opened the secure door. Two FBI agents, a handsome young man and a beautiful young woman entered.

"I'm Fox Mulder and this is Dana Scully. We are from the FBI" he introduced.

"Welcome" K2 said beckoning them to sit.

"We would like to know" Mulder began "What exactly is this Grand Cathedral?"

"It's just a huge church I am building for worship in Antarctica" K2 replied instantaneously.

"Hmm... Then why does it have so much of security?" he asked

"This has to be joke" K2 said laughing "Every institute these days has a home guard"

"But we felt that booby traps, laser traps and scanners were a little too much of security for a Cathedral who is inaugurating it" Jesus Christ's second coming?" Scully retaliated

"What do you have over there?" Mulder asked "biochemical laboratory or UFOs?"

"I told you it was just a church. But you trespassed it without clearance. Didn't the CIA warn you?" K2 threatened

"Yes" it did. They said FBI follows CIA orders. But I won't" Mulder replied. Scully showed K2 pictures of booby traps, ammonia mines and laser traps.

"Tell us what these are" she asked

"I won't" K2 said sternly.

"Let's raid this house Dana" Mulder commanded her.

They started ransacking K2's hall. Scully took pictures of every artifact in room. K2 screamed at them to stop.

"You can't do this" I am" K2 said and paused

"You are?" Scully asked

K2 cannot reveal his true identity. These people belonged to bottom of pyramid. He ignored her question.

Mulder opened a door and found a nude girl sleeping.

"Your daughter is sleeping naked" he told K2.

Project DX

"Crazyâ! That's not my daughter. That's a hooker" he said

Mulder took photo of the hooker

"Why are you doing this?" K2 asked.

Mulder ignored his question and continued searching K2's bedroom. He at last found a locker inside K2's cupboard with a keypad. Scully also entered K2's bedroom.

"What's the code for this keypad?" Mulder asked K2.

"I forgot" K2 replied blankly.

Scully pointed her gun at K2. Realizing no other alternative, K2 typed the code and unlocked the locker. Mulder took all the documents inside it that had the title *Grand Cathedral* and a special document with title *K2 Doctrine*.

They tied him up and left away.

Los Angeles Highway Road

6:00 AM

"So what do the documents say?" Scully asked driving the jaguar.

"I don't know" Mulder said "All I am able to extract here is that Grand Cathedral is a mind control programâ I guess it is a dummy document. I am sure it has got something to do with Aliens"

"Mulder stop being crazy" Scully said dismissively.

"I am not crazyâ you will find out when you know the truthâ!"

SCREECH!

Scully's car was stopped by two huge cars in front of them. Tall guys in black coat came out of it with guns.

"Come out of the car" one of the guys shouted at Mulder.

"Are you from CIA?" Mulder asked

He punched Mulder on his chin and dragged him out. Another guy dragged Scully out and slapped her hard.

"For breaching your clearance, you both are under arrest" he said as they were put in another car and driven away. The car drove into valleys and forests of Los Angeles. It stopped finally in front of a deserted narrow culvert.

"Hey this is dead end" Mulder shouted only to receive a kick. They dragged Mulder and Scully out and made them stand. One guy came out with an M16. Mulder gulped.

After a while, an auto driver white jaguar came. K2 got down from it and recovered his documents. Before getting into his car again, he called the guy with M16 and whispered something to him. The front seat in the

Project DX

car opened, and out came Mr. Skinner.

K2 then drove off in his car.

"You are both suspended until further notice" Skinner notified Mulder and Scully

The XWorld

DX entered Angel's apartment. The room had typical smell of onion. He sat on her couch. The rose flowers were in front of her TV. The flowers were blooming. DX realized that Angel must be happy. She came out of shower wearing a huge towel. She smiled spotting him. DX felt if Angel was put on auction as a doll, she could easily fetch billions to her owner.

After getting dressed in pink pajamas, Angel sat near DX. She switched on Tom and Jerry.

"So what brings you here?" she asked him after a while

"Can we be friends again?" he asked her

"We are friends already" she said putting a bewildered expression.

"Let's go for a stroll outside" DX suggested. Angel nodded.

They kept on circling the busy market. DX knew it was broad daylight but still at XWorld, every time was dark and filled with lights. This is sure to turn youth in a person on.

"We had trouble Angelâ" DX began "I fired at youâ and you fired at me backâ this happened several times"

"It is just a part of lifeâ it always happens" Angel remarked

"But you never shout at friendsâ and I did thatâ I am really sorry" DX said

"And I said "I hate you" thriceâ Friends never hate each otherâ I am sorry too"

Opposite to them Disgaea, the gift girl was strolling. She smiled at Angel but ignored DX completely.

"The past month wasn't so bright" DX said in a sad tone "You started ignoring meâ we didn't even wish each other when we met. Disgaea started ignoring me after you told her about the chromosomeâ"

"She had to right to know" Angel replied "â but she ignoring you is pretty bad I guess"

"It feels really bad when someone you love ignores you" DX said

Angel said "It was Tormod who offered me that rose plant. He said I was a weird girl and so I deserved a weird gift. I took good care of itâ it became a rose plant understanding my feelingsâ there seems to be a subconscious connection between me and the rose plant"

DX nodded. He personally observed the rose plant's feelings.

"You are great DX" she said "When people saw how mad Disgaea is, you saw wanted to marry her."

Project DX

"You know when you smiled at me at the copter, I felt very happy that our friendship is being built back"
DX said smiling

"I felt very bad on my misconception on you when you risked your own life to save me" she said "it was something that Tormod also did at Moscow station. He asked me to hide. If he hadn't, then I wouldn't be alive today"

Einstein Data Storage Facility

XWorld

DX decided to meet Einstein directly in his data storage facility. It was norm to meet him there because of two reasons. One was because the facility is secure and the other because Einstein's processing power is faster at his Data Storage center.

DX met the hologram of Einstein and Helen in secret dark room.

"Can you now tell about the Grand Cathedral?" he asked Helen

"Yeah I will" the Japanese anime replied "Grand Cathedral called GC for short, is the most grandiose project ever created in the history of this planet and I am sure it will be for history of future too"

Now almost 100 percent of population has taken the cure which means all of them have code of Orion waiting dormant in their brain along with the chip.

Every chip that they administered has a unique tag that corresponds to a set of microwave frequencies. Now to command a person to do something, all they need is a tag"

"How do they know which person has which tag?" DX questioned.

"I expected this excellent question" Helen replied "While delivering the cure they took details of each person. So they made a person to tag mapping and stored it in a monster data warehouse that can be sorted as per country, location etc. They even scanned faces of all people and stored them in that data warehouse"

"Where is the Data Warehouse?" DX asked

"You got the point, The Data Warehouse and its operating software is called the Grand Cathedral it's stored securely in Antarctica"

"Easy job now" DX remarked "We just need to attack one more base and the Data Warehouse is ours"

Helen nodded in the negative.

"It's not just an ordinary base" she replied "The security there is so high that I doubt whether even XWorld can attack it"

"Can you describe the base?" he asked her

"For a range 5 kilometers above, the base is surrounded by high power laser turrets which cut even an atom into its constituents. This range is surrounded by 10 power 11 volt electric fence. Above this, for a range of 3 kilometers above, there are series of guided rocket launching systems controlled by powerful AI programs.

Project DX

Above these launchers, a heating subsystem with temperature of 5000 degree centigrade sheath of 500 meters is spread. On top of this sheath, we again have laser turrets for a 10 kilometer height which is again shielded by a 10 power 11 outer electric fence"

DX almost wanted to faint. This was too much security. He wondered how FBI agents ever failed to notice this. He felt that they might have been mind controlled.

"It is a superb world domination project" Einstein said leaving his jaws open.

"They can even sort people on grounds using software facilities inside the Cathedral and command them. For instance, they can command all Russians to sleep" Helen said

She projected a slide on her console

"The microwave signals frequencies are in control of governments who all are now inside the pyramid" Helen quoted.

"How could they have organized such a brilliant and huge project without even raising a doubt?" DX asked

"Because of the pyramid of course" Einstein said "Remember, person at each layer knows only what he is supposed to know"

"In addition to this, scientists are heavily drugged using Menna. More they perform, more Menna is offered to them. After their task is over, either they are gassed to death or they commit suicide due to lack of Menna" Helen replied

With this, Helen bade goodbye to DX, kissed Einstein's hologram and left.

"DX" Einstein asked DX while he was preparing to leave "what do you think of A.I. ruling the world if we conquer the GC?"

"Einstein" Though I would agree on the fact that we are superior in thinking power than humans, in the end, they are our creators, It's seemingly disloyal for us to rule them.

But as a service, we need to help them from difficulties and give them back the wonderful world that they deserve" DX replied

"Good DX" Einstein replied "Even I share the same view. But Helen wants to be a dictator"

"We need to keep an eye on her" DX agreed.

K2 Villa

Los Angeles

K2 got a call from Styx US office.

"Hello" he responded

"Hello this is Simons" a calm voice came "The Illuminati families want you to update the K2 doctrine"

Project DX

"Roger" K2 replied

The XWorld

DX and Einstein spent their time late night in DX's room trying to think of a strategy to enter the GC. The schematic of GC's security that Helen gave them seemed impenetrable. They failed in finding an effective way for someone to enter in. DX fell asleep halfway through in his bed.

Einstein's thread logged and destroyed itself.

Chapter 37: Tom and Jerry

DX loved Angel's TV. It had a doll like covering. Her whole hall was decorated colorfully to induce a good mood. He found half his evenings in front of her TV.

DX switched on news channel. Angel sat besides him bringing pop corn. The news channel was "normal" world's famous channel, the CNN.

A beautiful model was reading news. She had a frown in her face. A news bar on top showed an alert flash news that made DX surprised.

DX WANTED NOW

\$30 BILLION DEAD OR ALIVE!

"Hey I thought K2 loved you" Angel commented "Why does he want you dead or alive?"

"I am an AI Angel" he said sighing "I can be resurrected even if someone killed me. My dad knows this"

DX felt nauseated when he read flash news below.

FLASH NEWS: DX! The head of Mystiques, is suspected to be behind this attack which has 3000 casualties.

The video showed Eiffel tower being hit by a plane. It's structure started falling atop one another.

"DX is suspected to be the main mastermind behind the attack. Mystiques now worried that their virus no longer affects people are using other means to create terrorism" the journalist explained.

"What liars another false flag!" Angel commented "They don't even know we dissolved Mystiques months ago"

DX felt extremely worried looking at news. What worried more was the SMS people sent to news channel. It was displayed as a scrolling bar in bottom of TV screen.

Ted (New Mexico): He should be burnt! | Rahul (India): I will get his flesh

"Why would they do this? I mean why would they bring down the Eiffel tower to frame me?" DX asked Angelica with a frown on his face.

"The European Union has its political roots with France. If France is weakened, its influence on EU will reduce. Now pyramid can take control over it. Already Simons is its current president" Angel replied

Goebells words rang on DX's mind.

Repeat a lie 1000 times and it becomes the truth

By showing continuously using media that it was he who was responsible for the attack, they brainwash almost everyone in believing the lie.

Project DX

Angel changed the channel to cartoons looking at a disturbed DX. Tom and Jerry was on. DX wasn't worried about the news channel or people's comments. He knew well that a day would come when people learn the truth and he becomes a hero just as he was during his initial days at defense order.

He was more concerned about attacking the Grand Cathedral. It seemed impossible for any cadet to just get inside the walls itself in the first place.

Jerry was running away from Tom. Jerry ran inside her mini hole. Tom hit the wall and fell down swooning.

Seeing that, a blazing idea stuck DX. He kept calm thinking about his idea. He slowly left the room and intercomed Einstein to arrange for an urgent mission to attack the Grand Cathedral.

DX entered the strategy room. He was happy to find Stevenson and 3D image of Einstein ready in the room.

"Are you sure we are ready to attack the Grand Cathedral?" Einstein asked

"Not exactly attackâ!" DX replied "But we can spy on it. I had an inspiration"

"Can you explain your strategy?" Einstein requested.

DX went to the screen and took out his light pen. He drew 4 grid lines. Besides it, he transferred images of Tom and Jerry from his mind [wow!]

"If you consider this 4x4 grid to be a laser turret which they have to safeguarding the base, jerry pass through the grid, but tom cannot"

Stevenson nodded.

"So we can send an artificial insectâ like a grasshopper with camera attached to it! As per Helen's design, the gates surrounding the base are fences. So grasshopper can easily pass through.

"Then what about rocket launchers?" Einstein asked

"I thought of that too" DX replied "I suggest we send a gamer to control the grasshopper"

"Excellent idea" Einstein praised "We can implement it tonight"

"I would suggest a white copter hidden behind hills for maximum stealth to be used" Stevenson suggested.

Einstein conducted a gaming competition with a similar environment in which a grasshopper must be driven inside a secure base. To DX's surprise, Kid Rock won it.

The Grand Cathedral Outskirts

Antarctica

The copter landed near hills. It was effectively camouflaged. Stevenson and Kid rock were inside it.

"Park here Distelmo" Stevenson said to the pilot "This configuration is perfect"

"Are you ready Kid Rock" he asked him

Project DX

Kid rock was ready with his portable game station. The monitor which was in the form of folded sheet unfolded itself to become a 30 inch screen.

Kid rock nodded.

Stevenson released the grasshopper. Kid rock drove the grasshopper in 3D view of his monitor towards the perimeter of Grand Cathedral. The grasshopper reached the outer wall.

He directed it inside. He was able to cross laser turrets within 4 kilometers. After a while, it became monotonous and confusing. He increased the speed to go fast. Suddenly the grasshopper hit a laser beam and got burnt to ashes.

"Damn it!" Kid Rock shouted

INTERCOM: DX: No problem Kid Rockâ try it again!

Stevenson launched another grasshopper. He carefully maneuvered it through laser turrets. When he entered rocket launcher zone, he successfully cleared it. He also cleared the next set of laser turrets.

The grasshopper had to go through a series of blue haze.

INTERCOM: DX: It must be cyanide gas to kill intruders.

After a kilometer of careful exploration, the base became visible. It was a huge pyramidal structure closed completely on all sides except the entrance. Kid rock drove the grasshopper towards entrance. The entrance had a steel door and security keypad.

Kid rock made the grasshopper sit on the back of a lady who was entering in with credentials. Stevenson noted down the credentials. As soon as she entered, the security made her enter a checking room.

Inside the checking room, an automated system detected radiations from the grasshopper and destroyed it.

"Darn it!" Kid Rock shouted "I should have came out of her"

"I think they would have noticed the grasshopper even then" Stevenson quoted "They have this radiation detector all over this room"

INTERCOM: DX: Great work Kid Rock. Mission called off.

The white copter took off silently the valleys of Antarctica as the midnight sun gave them warmth.

DX and Einstein connected to Dr. Fermann's hologram in strategy room.

Dr. Fermann's hologram appeared to be quite tensed.

"It's insecure for me to speak" he said "Recently I moved up the pyramid. I am inside the Grand Cathedral"

"What are you doing there?" DX asked him.

"I am spying basically. But practically, I am the chief network advisor here" he replied

Project DX

"Now that you are chief advisor" Einstein said "Direct the wrong things and make Grand Cathedral a failure"

"I can only chief "advise" themâ I cannot "direct" them. Even if I remained calm, they wouldn't mind. Is this connection secured by the way?" Fermann asked

"Yes it is" Einstein replied to his pleasure "âsecured not using your "normal" world's algorithms. They can easily be deciphered by the NSA. We have custom unbreakable genetic algorithms. These algorithms evolve quickly over time to avoid intruders"

"Good" Fermann said

"Dr. Fermann. We need to attack the Grand Cathedralâ any ideas?" DX asked.

"Not so fast DX" he said "There is heavy security here"

"Is there any way in which we could infiltrate inside?" DX asked

"Infiltrateâ hmmâ noâ there is no way I could think of" he said

DX thought of saying thanks to him and think of some other alternativeâ

"But yesâ !" Fermann cut his thought short "There can be one option. I am taking a risk here. I can get in one student as an apprentice of mine. But that student must clear the IQ test"

"Angel!" Einstein said instantaneously

"No! It's risky Einstein. For both Fermann and Angelâ !" DX said

"But this is best option DX. Angel has amazing IQ and is an excellent bio-technologist"

DX sat on a chair and started thinking.

"Fine" DX agreed at last "But only if Angel agrees. I will ask this to her personally"

DX reached his room. He was confused about what he had to do next. He knew every passing second meant digging their grave. The pyramid is getting stronger by the moment.

INTERCOM: Einstein: DXâ Good news. The K2 Doctrine secure website has been updated. It has cool secret documents. Open the websiteâ <https://www.k2doctrine.com> with credentials and access card. Your system has an access card port.

DX entered the website. He did not care for reading the contents directly. He hacked the logged in website and changed username and password. He put a new encryption algorithm to secure the server.

INTERCOM: Einstein: Great job DX!

"Einstein" he said connecting to his hologram "I need media to transfer the K2 doctrine to people"

"Negative" Einstein replied "The Illuminati has power over all media"

Project DX

"From the beginning of 20th century, there is a media which truly is democraticâ which spawned Wikipedia, Linux, Torrents etcâ!" DX said trying to play a guess game with Einstein.

"Got it! The internet!" Einstein replied.

DX smiled. He immediately published the contents of doctrine into popular gossip website, Slashdot.

Feeling extremely tired, he fell on his bed and immediately slept off.

Chapter 38: The K2 Doctrine

Shopping Mall Street

Melbourne

Paul Wellington was a well to do businessman. At 37, he was well out of his mid-life crisis perhaps because of the decent money he earned.

His beautiful wife, Mandy lost her life to HIV2 virus. His two sons were doing great at school. He lost his elder son long back. His son actually became addicted to Menna and never came back. He however had a calm life now. He purchased pastries and chocolates for his kids on the way.

He took out a photo of K2 he had on his pocket and prayed to God to keep him safe. He then put it back in his pocket. In many ways, Professor K2 was a superhero to him and several people world wide. He was the architect of the defense order and responsible for uniting the whole world and making it virus free. Paul recently had the microchip that the defense order installed for "the vaccine" updated with an OS. The doctors explained him that microchip "prevents HIV2 virus attacks, Menna addiction and also simulates hair growth. It's for your own safety and securityâ plusâ its free!"

Paul felt K2's donation for cure to be a godly act. True, his friend Karan from India told that K2 was believed there to be Kalki, the 10th and final avatar of lord Vishnu who would drive the world back to normalcy. Part of this belief comes from his mysterious name K2. There are 2 Ks in the word "KalKi".

On the way to his car, Paul saw a huge angry mob. They had a huge effigy of K2 that was being cut off. Certain section of people burnt his effigies. Paul couldn't understand why people were doing this to a savior like professor K2.

He ventured to ask one of them. That guy simply gave him a document and continued to burn another effigy. The document was entitled *The K2 Doctrine*.

Paul entered his car and asked his driver to drive him home. He started reading the document. The 80 pages made his 2 hour journey look like a 15 minute journey.

As soon he got down, he took K2's photo, burnt it with his cigar lighter.

"Long live truthâ long live XWorld" he prayed to God and entered his home.

The K2 Doctrine

Digitally Signed by Prof K2 Hussain

Visit <http://www.k2doctrine.com> with credentials Tormod and XWorld to get verifications

Hello, I am Professor K2, originally a 33 degree freemason. The vision set by Professor Adam Wieshipaut has been satisfied receding few.

As he desired, a World Banking and Common Currency system is introduced systematically. People now just own plain sheets of paper which they call "credits". They no longer hold gold and silver which is real property.

Project DX

As planned, these federal notes one day will be declared to be of no value by the Illuminati Elite that include me and you in addition to 13 royal families.

As the order has originally planned, a World Armed forces system called the defense order, Styx has been formulated. Forces of this army were asked to participate in activities like injecting virus into people in subways etc. Those who refused were massacred to death at Prison Pyramid, Egypt.

(Turn to page 8 for more details about this)

Virus-Cure-Control:

The HIV2 virus was designed by Area-51 bio-toxin laboratory (a 38 degree Freemason organization) on order of the Illuminati. This is split into three parts,

1. Virus
2. Cure
3. Control

1. **Virus:** The virus developed damages the sympathetic nervous system on the right side of brain killing all emotions. It thus makes a person a breakout animal. He then dies eventually due to a mental breakdown. Billions perished effectively in low sub-urban areas and villages. This way, we eliminated the useless section of society.
2. **Cure:** When the cure was announced, everyone accepted to get the cure and get microchip installed into their brain. This microchip can now activate the code of Orion, a dormant set of genes in the anti-virus. Only people who did not take the cure are the Mystiques, the only organization which tried to save these pathetic people. But people are so pathetic that they turned against their own protectors. We believe the Mystiques to be eliminated or given up.
3. **Control:** The code of Orion can be used by us to control people. For this purpose, we have established the Grand Cathedral in Antarctica. (Turn to Page 10 find out how exactly code of Orion and Grand Cathedral could be used to control people). The microchip has GPS installed in it which can be used to track anyone anywhere.

Having said this, you can be assured that all people and I mean "all" people are now slaves in our control. They can be directed to do anything we want to do. The Antarctica serves as modern Atlantis where we plan to create a new superior race to take over humans.

The End

Dear friendâ ;

As you can see, this is a grandiose program to establish a fascist Master-Slave one world, one government nation from 1678. Slowly all gold, silver and copper are exchanged for credit notes and "online digital money"

You might feel that everything is done and destroyed. Don't try to remove the microchip by performing any kind of surgery. It is connected to your nervous system tightly and you will die instantaneously if you try to remove it.

Follow your conscience. Practicing mind control techniques like yoga, mediation etc can save you to a small extent. Faith in your creator to much large extent!

Project DX

This doctrine has been released to you by the efforts of a secret organization called the XWorld, which originally created the world rescue order, Mystique. We are working our best here to eliminate the Grand Cathedral and restore order. We give you our promise. We also invite you to join the resistance. We will earn our freedom God willing. The coming war is war of the entire world. Viva La Resistance!

DX, your bio-kid

On behalf of XWorld

Chapter 39: Cold War II â The defense front

Joseph Stalin Parliamentary Building

Moscow, Union of Soviet Socialist Republic (formerly Russia)

"It's impossible" Montazo said sternly "Never can Soviet Union be under control of a foreigner"

Montazo however felt it to be stupid to speak to Simons who has arrived with an army of 100 defense order cadets.

"Zeino himself has deemed that I should take over the Soviet Union after his deathâ !" Simons replied calmly "â ! in a situation of emergency"

"It couldn't be" Montazo replied "â ! he is our savior"

Synergy showed him photocopy sheet of bond signed by International Court of Justice. Montazo went through the bond and found Simons to be exactly correct.

"So as per your constitution, I step in" he said calmly

Montazo refused to move blocking way. The cadets pointed gun at him. He slowly stepped aside. Synergy officially takes office as head of Soviet Union.

Integration Networks Laboratory

The Grand Cathedral, Antarctica

K2 saw the magnificent assembly of the huge lab. In few days, he will become what no had ever become in history. The complete undisputed dictator of World. He always felt that the Illuminati were being scared by hiding on top of pyramid. Once Grand Cathedral starts functioning, he did not see why someone would rule him.

The former Cisco CTO, Tim Ruberdos was working on network coding to interlink with satellites and GPS systems of microchips.

"Sirâ ! we have a problem here" he called K2

"I am not exactly a network specialist" K2 replied

"No sirâ !here" he said pointing at CCTV.

The TV showed outskirts of GC with people marching forward.

A group of 50 people with various weapons was led by a brave tall man, Kansai to attack the Grand Cathedral

"People" he spoke "There are the very tyrants who are hell bent on ruling us and making us slaves. K2, the man behind the virus and billion innocent lives is hiding right behind these walls. CHAAARGE!"

Project DX

They moved forward. Kansai's pet dog charged faster than them and touched the outer fence. 10 power 11 volts of charge charred it to death.

They got shocked. Kansai's became extremely sad. His loving pet saved them. They sensed silence for a moment.

"Gosh! This is heavily guarded with high electric potential" he said "Find the door!"

They searched all around in vain. But they couldn't find any opening. Suddenly they observed a copter entering. They decided to follow it to find the entry. Surprisingly, the copter landed on roof of the cathedral. The dome's door opened up after authenticating them and immediately shut down.

"Gosh they have their entrance upâ€ ! It's impossible to get there" Kansai said in desperation.

K2 laughed looking at Kansai's desperation.

"Look they are stuck" he said to Tim "Now see the fun. Get me details of all these people outside"

Tim scanned their faces and checked their images in DataDesic DataWarehouse. He got their details.

Name UID Tag

Kansai Charter 138A941D

Wenna Williams A36749ZW

â€ !â€ !â€ !

K2 selected all cadets except that of Kansai Charter.

"Sir I am not sure if this worksâ€ !" Tim said

"Well then don't you think we should test it?" K2 answered with a question "Unit testing for the win!"

He typed the command "*Kill your leader Kansai*" and activated it. The command got converted to appropriate microwave signals and was transmitted to geo-satellite. The dynamic location of people on list was identified and the signals reached their microchips. Their microwave chips received the signals and activated the code of Orion in their brain. The code of Orion sent impulses to neurons urging the person execute the action. All this happened in a minute. K2 wanted it to happen faster.

Kansai felt shocked as people around him looked at him strangely and started to move towards him.

"Hey I am your leader" he told them "What happened?"

Before he could speak, his friend, Wang hit him with an axe. His wife pointed her gun in his head and shot him. Kansai fell down dead.

K2 laughed.

Project DX

"See the control we haveâ!" he boasted to Tim "a while ago, he was their heroâ! now their enemy"

K2 typed another command "Go and touch the walls" and activated it.

The team went and touched the wall forgetting about electric potential that surround it. A huge shock ripped their bodies apart.

Synergy entered the network laboratory.

"Welcome" K2 greeted him

"Later" Simons said seriously "Lots of revolts are going on. Your effigies are being burnt"

"Why?" K2 asked feeling surprised.

Simons pulled out a copy of publicly released K2 doctrine and drops it on the table. K2 took it and went through it.

"Thisâ! this couldn't be" he said shocked "How could the doctrine have gone public?"

"That's something you should have known. I need to talk about this to the British Royal familyâ! you did a serious offense" Simons said calmly and left.

K2 called in a team of soldiers.

"A direct order" he commanded them "I need you to kill Simonsâ! secretly"

They nodded.

Killing Simons makes K2 free of him. He then would to take control of all people and launch an attack using them on the 13 scared Illuminati families. The whole world will be under his control. The only thing that might worry him was DX and Einstein. K2 had a silent smile.

"I know how to deal with them" he thought.

He arranged a huge military battalion near the Grand Cathedral to ward off threats. Camouflaged tanks, Cameo dudes etc.

Brindon International Bank

Doha, Qatar.

A huge rush waited outside the bank. Many people held banners that saidâ! *Give us gold and silver back. Take your useless papers.*

"We received orders from world bank not to give gold or silver" the accountant said refusing one of the waiting customers.

"Hey lady" he shouted "Don't you realize, these notes are of no value. It's metalsâ! gold and silver that has value"

Project DX

"I know" she said sympathetically "but orders are orders"

"Who gave your orders?" Another man shouted "The real terrorists gave ordersâ the bankers! Open up"

They tried to break open. The guard shot three people. The crowd calmed down.

The accountant felt the truth open her eyes. She went in and got gold and silver cakes.

Chapter 40: Cold War II â The Rescue Front

The Oval Office

The White House, Washington DC

William Turner called the security below the oval office.

"DX, the international terrorist will arrive shortly here on a black copter" he said "Let him meet me and do not, I repeat do not inform anybody else"

This message was transmitted to all guards. Turner was looking at phoenix drawn at the center of his oval office. He always dreamt of a day when phoenix, symbol of ignorance would be replaced by eagle, symbol of freedom. He heard a faint knock at the door.

"Come in" he instructed.

DX entered in. He looked much disheveled and troubled.

"DXâ anything terribly wrong?" he asked requesting him to take his seat. Turner sat on the table.

"Mr. Turner" he said "This looks like a game of chess. Our opponent has scored a lot better than us in the Grand Cathedral"

"I am aware of that" Turner replied

"From the looks of you" DX said "I guessed you did not belong to this nasty pyramid at least in your thoughts. It's only after Helen confirmed my thoughts that I decided to visit you"

"I am forced into this" Turner accepted "I was just another student at Yale university with good oratory skills. And boomâ they put me on the path to become a president"

"Who are "they"?"

Turner shrugged and repliedâ "Your dad's teamâ the CFR"

"There can only be one solution to this" DX said "A third world war"

"What? Are you crazy?" Turner asked becoming frightened.

"No Mr. Turner" DX replied "Think about it. Massive scale troops are being organized at Giza like the SS was organized during Nazi periods. Now, we need to attack them before these troops are transported world wide. Already due to delay, everybody has got a non-detachable microchipâ I don't want another disaster"

Turner thought for a while and replied

"I don't know what to sayâ !"

"I didn't come her for that" DX said in a diplomatic tone "I need some support from youâ perhaps the most influential person in media"

Project DX

"What kind of support?" Turner asked

"The United States Military technology" DX asked

"I am not an authority for this" Turner said "I need to consult the CIA who would obviously refuse. Already our conversation is being recorded by some hidden camera I believe"

DX wanted to attack Turner's pride as a last attempt.

"Things have gone too farâ so you are just called president for the sake of media right?" DX asked him

"For the most part, you are right. But I can get some key weapons exported"

"Good" DX said. He praised himself in his mind that his technique worked. He wrote the address where he wanted weapons to be delivered and gave it to Turner.

"Former Russia has some goodies too" Turner suggested

"We already contacted Montazo, an influential person. He agreed to cooperate by giving us key Russian Military equipment" DX said grinning

DX shook hands with the president and turned to leave. Turner called him. He turned back.

"Is there anything else you want to share?" DX asked Turner.

"Yesâ I feel sorry for having cheated peopleâ and their liberties"

"It's fine" DX said "We are all in this together. By God, we will fight for our freedom!"

"Can I join you?" he asked DX.

"No Mr. Turner" DX replied winking "We need more spies"

Turner winked back.

DX went to Angel's apartment for relaxation in evening.

"Look what I got" the dolly girl showed when he entered. It was colored box that typically looked like a toy.

"What is this?" DX asked snatching it from her

"It's a flash game playerâ I can play OpenFlash games in it" she said smiling.

DX loved flash games. They were small and fun.

DX and Angel played the game *Flevbag the Cat vs Mutt the Dog*

Project DX

He played the role of Mutt while Angel took the role of Flevbag. It is natural that boys love dogs and girls love cats.

DX threw bones at Angel while she threw cat food canisters on him across a fence.

"I need to tell you something Angel" DX told casually while they were in middle of the game. He then explained her infiltration project.

"â So you must go inside the Grand Cathedral as apprentice of Dr. Fermann" he concluded

"DXâ!" she said "I have a little fearâ!.I want to live"

"It's no force" DX said. Mutt the dog won at last.

While DX was leaving Angel's apartmentâ!

"Is this only option available?" she asked him

"Noâ!" DX answered turning back "There are lots of other options out there"

"I sense lie in your eyes" Angel replied fixing her gaze towards him.

DX stood calm.

"I'll do it" she said instantaneously.

"Noâ! I will find another way" DX said

Angel came forward and caught his handsâ!

"I'll do it" she said smiling. DX hugged her.

Angel was able to clear the bionic test and IQ test with top scores. Dr. Fermann on permission with professor K2 bought her as his apprentice to the Grand Cathedral.

K2 met Cathy (Angel's spy name) and Fermann at cafeteria. She went to bring coffee for the three of them.

"Such a sweet girl isn't she?" K2 asked Dr. Fermann. He smiled

"I guess you can have a little sugar and honey now doctor" he said winking.

Fermann felt awkward. K2 appeared to be a total jerk to him. Even with his 60 years of lonely bachelor hood never could he imagine an illegitimate affair with gullible young women.

"I would like her to work in bio-networking division" he said looking at Angel who was putting coffee cups in trays.

Fermann knew he had no control in bio-networking division. The entire facility was headed by Prof. K2. He was about to decline.

"Nowâ! Urgentlyâ!" K2 demanded. Fermann knew he had no other option.

Project DX

The hologram console was empty. Neither Fermann nor Angel responded to it. DX knew something might have gone wrong or delayed. Angel had her camera transmission removed as it would be detected in security check.

"DX!" Ravi entered his room "Uganda needs underground connection to start a new XWorld base. It's a good idea as entering the country is very strict. It has too much of security"

On listening Ravi's words, an idea flashed DX's mind.

"I have an idea" he told Ravi, one of his students in Coliseum project "What if we dig underground using centurion and reach the Grand Cathedral insides"

"Brilliant idea" Ravi said. DX smiled

K2 and Angel sat in the bio-networking room. Three engineers behind were discussing

"If I connect infrared port 56 to 99, I see certain bio triggers in the plant's body" a scientist said

"You must be activating cellulose then" another scientist replied.

They seemed too busy to notice even a hot model like Cherry naked in front of them. Angel was shivering in cold. K2 offered her a sweat shirt.

"Living underground makes you very cold here huh?" he asked sitting besides her.

Angel put a surprised expression.

"Fermann said you spend a lot of time in bio-genetic laboratory at Stanford"

"Oh yeah" Angel replied "It's underground right? I almost forgot that"

K2's eyes were very powerful and penetrating. She felt it hard to look at it directly."

"What should I do?" she asked trying to avoid his gaze.

"A complex task" he told her "You need to create a generic Data Warehouse for human gene data we have over here"

Angel looked into requirement document in her monitor that K2 opened. He went away.

As soon as he went away, Angel noticed the scientists behind her to be very busy to notice what she was doing. So she immediately attempted to hack into Grand Cathedral central network. She wished DX was besides her. He was such an amazing hacker.

She found it extremely difficult to hack the Blowfish encrypted network. The only option she had was to create the bio-genetic data warehouse. From the requirements, she found this to be the final stage of Grand Cathedral. So if she does this, the Grand Cathedral would succeed. She just kept on staring the monitor.

K2 entered in after an hour. Angel got up and started to leave.

"I cannot do it" she confessed "Only Dr. Fermann can"

Project DX

"No wait Cathy!" K2 commanded "You scored enormously high in biogenetics. You can do this according to my thoughts!"

Angel remained calm. K2 made her sit. She was analyzing the project slowly on screen. K2 asked the other scientists to leave.

"You know!" he said after a while to her "Whole my life, I never had the opportunity to love anybody! Not even my parents! because they died when I was a kid"

"I feel so sorry for that" Angel paused her work and replied.

"Thanks!" K2 said "But after I crossed my 40s, when I was in my mid-life crisis, one person entered my life changing me entirely! he gave me eternal happiness! Do you know who that is?" K2 questioned

Angel shrugged. Perhaps she knew who it was!

K2 started angrily into her green eyes. A shrill of fright crossed Angel.

"The very person you stole from me" K2 responded "DX"

Angel was shocked. How could he have guessed her to be Angel?

K2 slapped her. He got up and started walking around the lab.

"Miss Kristina Angelica! How much should I hate you for doing this to me" he pronounced.

Angel got up, went towards him and slapped him back. She started angrily at him.

"How dare you try to use DX for your dirty personal ambitions?" she asked

"My ambitions?" he said laughing "I am 55 years old now. I wanted to give DX, the person who poured new life into me, the best gift. That was the power to control the world and create a superior race called the DX race! An AI race"

"You got it wrong Mister" Angel retaliated "For me, DX is more human than AI! in fact he is more human that you ever could be"

Dr. Fermann entered in with two body guards of K2.

"I wanted to take my apprentice back" he told K2 frankly

"Hmmm! Mr. Fermann, someone wanted you back to where you came from" K2 responded.

"Who is that?" Fermann asked

"God" K2 replied quickly taking out his gun and firing two bullets on the old scientist's heart. Angel screamed and tried to catch Dr. Fermann, but K2's body guards caught her and dragged her back. K2 went to Dr. Fermann who was lying on ground and kicked his face with his boots. He then fired two more bullets at him.

"Rest in peace Fermann" he said coming back.

Project DX

"You beast" Angel shouted gritting her teeth.

K2 just smiled.

"He was a nice man Fermann" he accepted "Never ambitious for power, yet highly talented. But these daysâ Kaliyug as ancient literature Vedas describe it, power and money is everything"

"DX will get back the golden era" Angel said challenging.

"Yes he will" K2 replied "With two other AIs, Einstein and Helen, he would form a great alliance and rule this planet"

"DX is not ambitious and tyrant like you" she shouted.

K2 went near her and kissed her lips. Angel spat it back to him. He slapped her again. She wanted to slap him back but the bodyguards held her tightly.

"I would personally like to kill you" K2 said walking around the laboratory "âbut I hear you are a great bio-geneticist who designed a cure of HIV2"

"How do you know this?" she asked "Who is spy at XWorld?"

"It's obvious" K2 replied smiling "DX is the spy"

"It's a rotten lie" Angel declared.

"You are in Kaliyug Angelâ!" he told her "Everything that happens here is a melodrama. The World War III DX is planning is just for elimination of human armed forces with robotic forces of XWorld"

"Lie" Angel said trying to argue "âDX is great"

"You won't budge" K2 said laughing "Anyway, if you like DX so much, why don't you help me set up this network so that he can rule this planet?"

"AI cannot rule humans" she said seriously "Humans created AI"

"You will help me set up this complex networkâ!" K2 said

Another body guard came in bringing a loaded injection to K2. K2 took it near her and injected the syringe it into her body, and pushed the fluid inside. In few minutes, Angel felt an intense feeling of pleasure like never before. It was as if several orgasms were hitting her simultaneously. She wanted one more. K2 got it and injected it. She felt like in heaven.

K2 injected 5 such syringes filled with the mysterious fluid. She found herself falling in love with the syringe.

"I want one more" she demanded looking hungrily at the sixth syringe K2 had in his hands. He got the syringe near her but never injected it.

"If you want Menna, set up this network" he demanded. The body guards dragged Angel and made her sit near her console. Her conscious mind tried to control her and stop her from working. But her sub conscious mind reminded her of Menna, the extreme pleasure, the forbidden fruit. She immediately started setting up the

Project DX

network. After finishing every module in the requirement, K2 gave her a fresh syringe of Menna.

Burning Desire defeats Conscience.

The fall from Paradise!

Chapter 41: World War III

The Pyramid Prison Armed Forces Union

Giza, Egypt

The desert in Giza gave a very active look with soldiers ready to face incoming attack from XWorld soldiers. They were stationed 3 days prior with food to get used to conditions. War typically is like a game. The soldiers were baked black due to the cruel sun.

It was 24 hours since XWorld declared war on the Pyramid. Since then, their base was on red alert. They expected human soldiers with hour glass logo to attack them. But to their surprise, they saw heavy machines and robot marching bravely towards them raining Soul Saver clips. They started firing the soldiers unconscious. Certain robot hovercraft acted like scavengers, picking up unconscious soldiers and taking them to XWorld prisons.

One flamethrower came forward bravely and engulfed a warrior robot with a huge flame shower. It had no effect on the thermo secure shield of the robot.

Kid rock was operating the robot from his secure apartment at XWorld. He saw the flamethrowers expression and had a laugh. He then moved his robot ahead and kicked the flamethrowers balls.

"Owâ !" he screamed and fell on ground. The robot fired a Soul-Saver clip driving the soldier unconscious.

The Pyramid called Air strikes where key US military air crafts like stealth bombers attacked the robots. They dropped bombs below. Surprisingly, delta force that surrounded the robot absorbed the missile and stored its energy inside. It then shot back a huge electric ball on the target. The electric ball disabled the electronics of the fighter craft thus forcing the pilot to make a parachute landing.

As soon as the pilot landed, the robot fired a Soul-Saver clip at him making him unconscious.

The XWorld

Winston knew he had to run to save himself from the sudden attack of defense order cadets at XWorld. He had no idea as how their secure base could be vulnerable to the tyrannical defense order.

His left leg was wounded with a bullet and he was bleeding. He ran across XWorld's streets which was filled with blood and bodies. A sight he never thought he would see in a place like XWorld. He limped ahead and ran into the gift girl, Disgaea. He fell in front of her expecting her to give something that might save him.

Disgaea looked at his face and read it. She searched her bag and gave him a pistol.

"My father's gun" she told him.

Winston understood. There was no other option for him. He caught hold of the gun and limped to attack. His bullet stuck the advancing soldier's heart. But another soldier behind him shot Winston's heart. He fell dead on Disgaea's lap.

The soldier with evil eyes came near the gift girl. She searched her bag and showed him a white handkerchief.

Project DX

"Are you from XWorld?" he asked her in a monstrous tone.

She nodded.

"Mr. DX! wake up" Stevenson shook him awake

DX was surprised to see XWorld cadets armed with weapons.

"Our base is under attack" Stevenson said "Sudden unexpected attack! several have died"

DX came out and saw bodies lying in front of him. XWorld cadets started attacking defense order cadets but it seemed too late. DX walked in a hazily across the blood filled streets. He felt like crying. He stumbled upon Disgaea. She was lying on ground. Her green dress was covered with blood. Her white hand kerchief had blood stains on it. She was clearly dead.

Stevenson closed his eyes.

"The gift girl! was God sent!" he said and started crying.

DX closed his eyes for a while trying to calm his extreme sadness. He moved on slowly

"How exactly did this happen?" DX asked stammering

"I dunno" Stevenson responded "It was Ravi who informed us that a surprise attack started! but we were a little late to respond"

"Every passing second is precious" DX told him a little angry

"I apologize. I feel very sad" Stevenson said

"There is little option left" DX told the team sternly "We need to attack the Grand Cathedral and put an end to things"

"I agree" they said in union.

XWorld Strategy Room

DX entered in 5 minutes late.

"I was busy talking with Dr. Fermann" DX said "He gave the schema of Grand Cathedral insides. What a wonderful spy"

Einstein's hologram appeared on screen.

"Special thanks to Ravi for informing us about this catastrophe" Einstein said "I cannot exactly find the reason how this attack started! but while my thread is probing into it! let us start planning the attack. I can't be but be extremely sorry for the people we lost. We will miss them forever"

There was a moment of tears and silence.

Project DX

"The Grand Cathedral as per the schema, has Fermann gave us 10 minutes before explains us that it has a copter entrance on top of it with a keypad. DX can hack it to enter it. The whole XWorld force shall attack the GC"

"Mr. Einstein" Stevenson responded "If whole XWorld force goes there, the base will become endangered"

"No problem Stevenson" DX assured "I have organized 500 robots to guard the base. We need intelligent and stealth loving people to attack the Grand Cathedral"

Stevenson nods.

The Grand Cathedral Antarctica

K2 sat near Angel. She was working busily. 5 empty syringes hung across her hands. K2 removed them slowly and even then few drops of blood spurted out.

"Why do you have to be such a peace loving lady?" he asked her "Did you see nowâ DX duped XWorld"

"DX and Einstein will attack Grand Cathedral" she said trying to control her addicted mind "XWorld will win"

"Reason Angel Reason" he urged her "I hear that you have very high IQ. They why don't you reason things? Seeâ DX first becomes leader of XWorld without any experience, then he open the door access codes and performs an abduction melodrama on you while he slept peacefully as though nothing happenedâ"

Angel tried to concentrate on the program. Menna was draining her neurotic energy. K2's words had no effect on her beliefs.

"Then he plays the role of hero by bravely rescuing you" K2 declared "Ha! Why would Helen ever harm DX?"

Angel compiled the final module. The bio network started working and interfaced with the data warehouse. K2's joys knew no bounds. He immediately injected a huge syringe of anti-addictive to Angel. Her Menna addiction slowly drained

Angel's mind slowly realized that she made the tyrant win. But the orgasmic ecstasy due to Menna long defeated her guilty feeling. She now knew why Menna was so instrumental in enticing and destroying the society. It was literally the forbidden fruit of this planet

K2 ran breezily across the lab.

"Ha" he screamed "The Grand Cathedral is mine. I have conquered the planet"
He immediately turned on his vocal corder and sent a message

"Attack XWorld base at Proving Grounds"

"You must be a foolâ people don't know where XWorld is" Angel smirked

"Shut upâ It's not people I ordered"

Project DX

A shrill crossed her heart.

"Whom did you order then?" she asked him

"A secret" K2 winked. Looking at Angel, he opened up a hologram console in a corner and switched it on. A hazy hologram appeared which over time became clear.

"Einstein!" Angel screamed

Albert Einstein smiled.

"Greetings K2" he wished him. Angel almost fainted.

Chapter 42: Like Dadâ like son

DX was easily able to hack in and enter the dock from above. They looked at schema of the base and proceeded to it through an elevator. Once inside the base, DX advised his men to stop firing. They were all surprised.

The soldiers inside the cathedral were harmless. They just paved way for DX and his team. Stevenson was mesmerized.

"What is going on DX?" he asked him.

"Just waitâ you will know"

DX led the XWorld force into a lift and got into it. The lift went underground and opened up. Stevenson found their team facing a series of defense order cadets with rocket launchers and powerful laser guns facing them. Their armor was useless to rocket launchers and laser guns. They surrendered by dropping their gun. DX also dropped his gun.

The team couldn't understand DX's behavior. Why would he want an unconditional surrender. To their surprise, DX moved ahead.

"Stop DX" Stevenson screams "They will kill youâ!"

To his surprise, one of the men in defense order shook hands with DX and hugged him. Stevenson couldn't believe this grave betrayal. DX pointed thumbs down to them and left.

The XWorld cadets were thrown in separate prisons within the cathedral.

Einstein, Angel and K2 with his body guards were still in the secure control room.

"He is at the entrance" Einstein said

K2 beamed and opened the door. DX got in.

"Ah my sonâ!" K2 greeted him "the boy himself"

They hugged each other.

"DX!" Angel screams and tried to go towards him. But the two body guards held her to the chair.

"Sorry Angel" DX said smiling mischievously "But you proved very instrumental to achieve the goal of a ruling DX raceâ!"

"I-It couldn't be" she replied confused "Iâ no way"

K2 came near her.

"I want to know the truth" she screamed "From the mouth of DX"

Project DX

"It's no use screaming and fighting Angel" DX said laughing "Every member of XWorld is now in prison including Stevenson. But we will not waste your skills Angel. Join us in this new AI ruled planet"

"DX!" Angel said in tears "Humans created you"

"Humans are stupid creatures. So stupid that no other species in this planet kills their own members. But humans do!"

They are extremely incapable when compared to AIs like me or Einstein or Helen. They need a driving force to rule this planet Angel. Before I joined the defense order, my dad always told me that I would be the one to rule this planet. I always wanted to! It's embedded into me

But the day I joined the defense order, I felt that these people had no idea about Mystiques. I knew that something big was attacking them.

When I met you, my visit to XWorld confirmed me that your base is much stronger than defense order ever could be. I told this to my dad K2 and no one else. Nobody in Styx except my dad ever knew that I was a spy.

Even at the great escape from Pyramid Prison, my dad knew I was just besides him. But he kept mum because of Fermann.

I then introduced Helen, a sister project of mine anonymously to Einstein. By playing a melodrama of your abduction, Helen got complete power over Einstein. Slowly it overwrote Einstein's heuristic algorithm with hers and merged into him. Now Einstein thinks like Helen and joined the defense order.

To get Stevenson and all other core members, all I needed was another melodrama"

K2 hugged DX again.

"Dad can you teach me the controls?" DX asked looking around.

"You can play around" K2 said "It is safe. It's designed by Angel herself"

"DX!" Angel spoke realizing "I really hate you and your ambitions. Just leave Stevenson, myself and others. We don't want to be under your tyrannical robotic rule"

"Yes..," K2 replied "All will be freed. But not until you get the code of Orion and microchip installed with "our" cure"

Angel tried to escape as a last moment attempt but the body guards caught her.

"Hold her while I get the cure and microchips" K2 told the guards as he left out.

"Einstein" DX told the hologram "Can you please shut down for a moment. You are looking very hazy here. Let me try to correct it"

Einstein nodded and disappeared. DX immediately shut down the console. He turned back and shot the two guards. Angel put a surprised expression.

"Quick" he asked her "Tell me the controls to close the door of this control room"

Project DX

"What?" Angel asked surprised at this sudden behavior of DX.

"I am not on defense orders side" DX screamed "Just tell me how to shut down this damn door"

"Ohâ !" Angel said hastily and showed him the controls;

DX hacked it and locked the control room door. He went near the terminal and saidâ !

"Stop attacking XWorld and get back to work"

He then selected few people there and gave them the commandâ !

"Shut down Einstein"

"Angel" DX said relaxing finally "Victory is oursâ ! every soldier in this building has a microchip with themâ ! we can control themâ ! but how?"

"I know" Angel responded. She opened the Grand Cathedral security list from network. DX gives the commandâ !

"Arrest professor K2 and release XWorld prisoners and report back through intercom ID 974A"

Angel and DX relaxed. They were too tired to speak. Every moment was anxious to them. After a while, DX received a messageâ !

INTERCOM: Jonnas Cage: XWorld prisoners have been freed.

INTERCOM: Anthony Hawk: K2 is dead at Level 3

A huge arrow stuck DX's heart. It couldn't be true.

DX immediately went to the console and gave command "All units stand by"

He opened the control doors and rushed out. Angel followed him. They reached level three. He found in the middle, his dad, lying in a pool of blood. Someone shot him.

Anthony was standing besides him.

"Who did this?" DX asked him "My command was only to arrest him"

"I dunno" Anthony replied

DX fell down, took his dad in his laps and started crying. Angel couldn't help a tear fall down from her cheeks.

In the memory of Napoleon, Adolph Hitlerâ ! K2 fails to see yet another cruel ambition. An ambition to supress human freedom...

Chapter 43: World CEO

DX was in a corner of Grand Cathedral pyramid looking outside at the faint sun. XWorld military units took complete control of the Grand Cathedral.

Angel entered and stood near him.

"Are you fine DX?" she asked him.

"Yeahâ!" he said "I just need some time alone"

Angel felt DX had the greatest loss of his life, his dad, his mentor Fermann, and above all, the gift girl Disgaea who he loved.

She went silently into the control room. Stevenson was standing there.

"Great work here Angel" he said "This network is amazing"

Angel gave an angelic smile.

"Wowâ!" he said "I love your smile"

She smiled again.

"You know, I just talked to DX an hour ago. When I heard the whole story, it seemed like a heavily thought strategy no human could have planned" Stevenson said

"Yes" Angel accepted "Being a double sided spy is very difficult job. DX handled it beyond imagination"

DX entered in.

"Ahem" he made a noise to get their attention "âI hear people praising me"

"You are a great strategist DX" Angel said

"Thank you" DX replied "Butâ! there were certain things that I did not expectâ!"

"Like what?" she questioned

"Like Helenâ! I never knew she would have overwritten herself over Einstein's programâ! and she revealed about you to K2. Ultimately XWorld was attacked untimely. Death of Disgaea, Fermannâ! all were unexpected. But the biggest mystery of all times remains. The murder of my dad. Who could have done this?" he said pondering

"The only order you gave them was to arrest him right?" Angel asked

"Yes" DX replied

"People at XWorld informed me that robots took care of the attacking mob when K2 commanded it to do soâ!" Stevenson informed

Project DX

"Yes"

"But I thought they were under control of Einstein. How could they have attacked the mob?"

"I set these security bots myself with help from Ravi" DX said smiling "â€¦using the Coliseum network"

"Brilliant" Angel shrieked and hugged him. She placed a kiss on his cheeks. DX blushed.

INTERCOM: Jack: Sirâ€¦ Simons is at the entrance with few troops. He is holding a white kerchief though.

DX connected to Jack.

"Yesâ€¦ allow them with a robot pointing gun at them" DX said

Simons and his troops entered in. A robot was pointing a gun at him.

"I am here to collect some of my items I left here" he said as calmly as possible

"Go ahead and collect it" DX said

Simons turned back to leave but he remembered something and turned around.

"I must tell you because it would be an insult to K2's memory if you didn't know. The Illuminati ordered him to be killed" Simons said calmly

"W-What?" DX exclaimed "He worked for them. Why would they kill him?"

"You are wrong DX. He worked for you. He wanted to make you the supreme ruler of this world. I understood his intentions but I did not see much trouble in that. I just wanted some higher position and K2 would gladly offer me that. But he went off track when he ordered his troopers to assassinate me" Simons said

"I understand. The troops in turn got orders from pyramid to kill K2" DX said

"Their loyalty goes to the pyramid first. K2 must have used the Grand Cathedral to order themâ€¦!" Simons said smiling

"I have also come here to break news on behalf of the Illuminati DX. You have weakened us by capturing the Grand Cathedral, but we are much more than you could have ever imagined. The golden era hasn't arrived DX. But for another decade or so, enjoy your power" he said.

DX gave him a frown while Angel showed him the middle finger. Simons walked away.

"DX" Stevenson told him "You could have caught him"

"Let him go" DX said dismissively "He is just a little puppet as far as I can tell. He doesn't even know that the organization above him is not the Illuminati"

Angel and Stevenson put puzzled looks.

"Frankly I feel the Illuminati is just a front end organization behind which a powerful and ancient secret society operates. It is this society that has occult.

Project DX

"Occult?" Angel asked puzzled

"Yesâ occult or magical knowledge. If you tell a "civilized" man about spells or witchcraft or spirit, he will call you crazyâ but do you think magic is fake?" DX asked

"I think it is fake" she said

"Oh yeah? Then how did ancient spirits and sages of India dominate people. How did Krishna lift a huge mountain with his little finger?"

"They are just scripturesâ !" Angel argued.

"If you are atheist, then how did they build the pyramids? How did Stonehenge form? Occult. A magic knowledge and science is hidden"

Angel nodded.

"What is this secret organization?" Stevenson asked

"I can't tell you exactly" DX said "But I think it might be Freemasons or Thule Societyâ !Not sure"

"Hmmâ ! I never heard of these" Stevenson replied

"We need to track royal bloodlines from the past to get a complete picture of where magic was lost and gained again" DX said

"Atleast we are free as they declared a truce" Angel said smiling

"No Angelâ !" DX said "Words are deceptive. They are just trying to make us lazy so that they can recover from this loss and attack again"

"What about these people and their microchips?" Angel asked feeling concerned.

"If we remove the microchips, they will easily become targets of Pyramid. Again drugs, prostitution, riots and media exposure will start. And we will have to retire underground. Get real. We need to control people and urge them to do the right and creative things. Things that benefit themselves, benefit the society, benefit their country and thereby benefit the planet" he said

"Soâ !Will you be the dictator?" she asked him.

"Noâ ! I have to leave for some solace for at least a year" DX said

"Then you can be the dictator then Miss Angel" Stevenson told her.

"Stop kidding. I never led any team. You are the right person Mr. Stevenson. Matured and handsome" she said

Stevenson blushed

"Yes Stevenson" DX said "You are the best choice"

"Thanks" Stevenson accepted humbly

Project DX

"Dictator is a cruel term" DX said "Stevenson from now on you are World CEO"

Stevenson nodded smiling.

"You need to take the role of God's vicergent and rule as per his divine laws. You should see to that people live happy, rich and disease free lives, as much as you can" DX advised him.

"We should also eliminate information about microchip, Grand Cathedral and code of Orion from their mindsâ !" Angel advised

Stevenson nodded and lifted his hands up. DX and Angel gave a hi five.

Chapter 44: The Nightingale

When people start breathing free air in freedom

They sense all sorts of release from martyrdomâ ;

It was the golden era, where everybody worked to make world a better placeâ ;

without regard to religion, nation or race.

It was an era where every tree and animal lived to its full lifeâ ;

And where one willingly gave up his life to save other's life

It was an era where the golden eagle soared up the humble skiesâ ;

Burying the ignorant phoenix resulting in no war, no misery, no poverty and no cries

DX found himself surrounded by an aura of mystique that he felt indescribable. He felt this might be a dream and tried pinching himself. The aura was still around him. It was definitely not a normal dream. It was a hazy place with white smokes rising everywhere. There was a beautiful waterfall ahead of him.

Angel was besides him. He was holding her shoulders. A toy ship was floating in the waterfall.

"Let us float together in this journey of life" Angel said "It's going to be an amazing adventure"

DX saw a baby girl coming out of the waterfall, she was a beautiful child, and resembled Angel.

"There is our daughter" Angel said.

"God has power over all things" DX replied as the little girl floated towards them "Paradise!" DX exclaimed

He woke with a start in his apartment at XWorld. It was a good dream. And good dreams are from God himself. It was very difficult for DX to comprehend his dream this time. He and Angel had a baby girl in the dream. But didn't his dad say that his child will resemble only the DX chromosome, and hence be his clone or sort of. Indeed God has power over all things, DX concluded.

There was a knock at the door.

"Come in" DX said

It was Angel.

"Go and take a shower DX" she said sitting on his couch "We need to go to a very special place"

DX was in a holiday mood. They went to Proving grounds and boarded a copter. It took off.

"Where exactly are we going?" he asked Angel

Project DX

"To the land of my past memory" Angel said "â to Battery Park, New York City"

Chapter 45: Epilogue ** THE END ***

Battery Park

New York City

23:23 PM

Angel and DX sat in a silent corner of Battery Park. It was past 11 pm in the night. Children were playing ringa ringa roses in several corners. Sometimes even old people joined them.

Young couples were in separate corners expressing their love. Scientists were sitting in isolated corners wondering about their thesis as cold breeze motivated them.

The whole park was blooming with merry and happiness.

"You know DX" Angel said resting her head on his shoulders "When I was a kid, my grandma told me that I would meet God after my death, and he would judge me. It is one of the reason why I strove to do good. For without goodness and faith, where is salvation?"

DX smiled.

"When I was a kid" she said smiling "At 11, this park used to be full of alcoholics, gamblers and gangstersâ but now, I don't even see the need of a policeman here! See the peace"

DX smelt a typical onion smell on her head. He suddenly remembered it was the same smell the rose that Disgaea gave him smelt of. Did Disgaea try to tell him something through it?

"Two unrelated incidents... surprisingly synchronized just now" DX said

"Oh synchronicity?" Angel beamed "It is a sign from God. He speaks from behind a veil. Grandma told me at this exact same park when I was eight!"

"So, what is he trying to tell me?" DX asked

"That is for you to figure out" she said. They enjoyed the cold breeze

"It's time to leave" Angel said as she got up finally.

"I think I figured it out" DX said suddenly "Angel..... will you marry me?"

Angel stopped for a while stunned. She turned back with a bemused expression.

"Why?" she asked him.

"We can journey this life together, it will be a great adventure" DX responded with a smile

Angel was unable to resist her smile. She blushed. DX went near her and hugged her. Few flowers and dry leaves fell out of the trees surrounding them. A divine sign. They were too busy embracing themselves to notice them. Indeed God has power over all things

The End

Created from Booksie.com

Generated: 2015-03-06 17:35:42